

WILD: No Room for the Weak

PROLOGUE

(In February 2009, Port Harcourt, Nigeria was ranked among the three most dangerous cities in the world, especially for foreign workers. In 2016, National Bureau of statistics crime report declared the city as the third highest total crime rate even after the amnesty given to the militants. Most dangerous neighborhoods include Rumuola, Abuloma, Ogbunabali, Borokiri, Ikwerre Road but the master of all is D-line one of the densely populated area. Kidney Island houses Cloud, the biggest night/strip club owned by Cloud, the most dangerous drug lord and trafficker in the whole of South South Nigeria. He also controls the whole of D-line and even Abuloma and Ikwerre Road. Police officers are under his payroll. The bodies of many undercover agents have ended up floating on Bonny River which is one of his routes yet no one can find evidence of his crime or trace the dead bodies to him. Omega order has already be given once Intel is confirmed but none have been able to find undisputed evidence of his crime because no enemy has ever entered and come out alive except for two Special Force soldiers from the python team who were fatally injured, one still in coma. Now the Circle must intervene but Wild, the leader has chosen himself to enter Cloud's territory because after more than twenty one years, he saw her pictures which was taken by one of the Special Force soldiers, the girl he has been searching for.)

THREE WEEKS BEFORE THE GAME.....



Edit with WPS Office

There was no sound coming from the door but she knew someone was opening it. The room was very dark and Mum had warned her to make sure she used the torch only when necessary and to never open the door to anybody. She sat up and located the torch on the bed. She thought he would be Biggi, but Uncle Cloud had warned Biggi not to touch her again and Biggi did not have the keys.

She switched on the torch and jerked up screaming. The man was already in her room and he was not Biggi, he was not big and his face looked like a mask. She had seen a mask in her coloring book.

She shifted with trepidation as the man walked close to the bed. Her back hit the wall. There was no escape. The man brought out a knife, it glittered as he waved it at her. She wanted to run but she was shaking badly that she could not even scream. The man grabbed her blouse and she screamed as the knife came close to her throat and screamed louder when she felt a very sharp pain on her neck.

She opened her eyes to a very large room. The first thing that came to her mind was she must be in heaven. Aunty Pat, her teacher had talked about heaven during Christian Religious Studies' class. She said when good people died, they went to heaven while bad people went to hell. She was really in heaven because the room was her dream room. It was painted light purple but Aunty Pat had called it lilac. There were also blue and white used to design the background. Her bed was covered with a purple bedspread and it was very high. She would need to use the beautiful sky blue stairs connected to the bed to climb down. She raised her head and gasp in awe. There was no roof. It was all blue sky with white cloud and the sun from a distance. Tall trees were

almost touching the sky and different colors of birds were flying around. She turned right and gasp again. It was a waterfall from a big mountain falling into a garden with so many colorful flowers. She gently climbed down the bed and went close. She stretched her hands towards the water but touched a glass.

'It's outside' she thought.

She turned right and saw so many toy trains running around a circle road. Close to it was a fountain flowing into pots of flowers placed step by step. At her front was the most beautiful sight.

"Canvas" she shouted running towards so many canvas paintings. She loved drawing and painting and she had a book with everything one needed to draw and paint all shown inside. She never got one because Mum said it was a waste of money that all girls ended the same way. She never liked her drawing. It was all Aunty Pat and she most times hid it from Mum because she had beaten her and torn the one she painted of her. She said she should read her book or she would become useless like her. Mum was becoming worse every day, she was now afraid of her.

She studied all the paintings and gasped when she got to the third painting. She was looking at herself but she was putting on a funny gown and there was also something different with her eyes, it was not that big. What confused her most was the boy standing behind her, holding her shoulders. She had never seen him before.

She continued to the next one and gasped again. She was looking at Mum with a very big man, like Biggi. He was holding her shoulders like the first painting. He was not Biggi because Biggi was fat, he was not fat but big. She was the third person on the canvas



painting. Mum was holding her shoulders. The painter at least got her eyes right this time.

"Dad, Mum, Daughter" she read out what was pasted on each of the paintings. She gasps again.

Mum said her dad was a very bad man and he was dead and it was because of her stupid dad Uncle Cloud was forcing her to do what she did not like because her dad was owing Uncle Cloud. This was not the person Biggi had shown her. Her dad was not big and he was not dark. Biggi said her dad used to work for Uncle Cloud but stole his money, then Uncle Cloud killed him and he would kill her if Mum did not pay back. That was the day Biggi pinched her nipple. But she was in heaven.

'God knows everything, God is never wrong' she thought.

She went back to the other canvas and started laughing. The painter was very wrong. She started pulling off the sticky paper, rearranging them properly. She could read three to five letter words with ease, then words that were common, like animal names and others that were in her coloring book. The painter had written a dog in the painting of a cat. There were so many mistakes. She thought Angels were intelligent.....

The sound of the door being opened made her pause, she suddenly became afraid. No one was supposed to fear when they were in heaven. She glued her eyes to the door and waited for who would show up. It was the big man in the painting. She froze where she was standing but she was suddenly no longer afraid.

'Angels are not big and they always wear white' she thought as the man came closer.

He did not talk to her, he just sat down on a round purple chair but stood up because it was too small for him. He sat down on the beautiful sky-blue tiles and crossed his legs. The tiles looked like someone was standing on top of a blue sea. He just looked at her and did not say a word. She remembered that Aunty Pat used to call God her daddy.

"Are you God?" she asked but made her voice low.

He shook his head.

"Are you an Angel?"

He also shook his head.

"Are you my dad?"

He nodded.

She remembered the picture Biggi showed her and shook her head.

"Do people change when they die? You don't look like my dad and Mum said he is burning in hell."

He did not answer. She needed to confirm. There was a mirror behind the toy train which made it look double. She ran to it and she did not change. It was her face.

"Is this not heaven?" she asked sitting down opposite the man and also crossing her legs.

She should be afraid, big men like him were always bad, just like Biggi but she was not.

She felt safe.



He shook his head.

"But it looks like heaven, it's bigger than my house. And it has all the beautiful things I want just no fish."

The man tapped his finger on a black big wristwatch on his left hand. He pointed for her to look towards the waterfall. She turned and gasps, then screamed.

"Shark."

She ran to the glass and watched as the shark increased to three sharks, then changed to a big whale. The waterfall had disappeared, it was now a sea. She was so excited.

She ran back to the man.

"How did you do that? This is heaven. You don't want to tell me. I know because I died..."

She paused. It felt weird saying it. Mum had hit her when she asked about death, she said she was trying to know more than her age. But Aunty Pat said it was only death that could take one to heaven. She remembered the mask man that came to her room, he had cut her throat. She touched her throat and felt nothing.

The man shook his head again.

"Can you talk?"

"Yes."

His voice was deep and sounded on her chest but she was not afraid. She felt so safe.

"Who are you?"



"I'm your real dad."

"I don't understand."

"The other one is your fake dad. You are my little girl."

"I still don't understand. You say this is not heaven but my dad is dead too."

"That is your other dad, this is your new room and I'm your real dad."

"My room?"

He nodded.

She still did not understand. She had seen the man who came to her room and he was not huge and he had killed her.

"Someone came to..."

"I know and you are not dead. He just made you look like you are dead so Cloud will not look for you."

"I don't understand."

"Do you want me to show you?"

She nodded.

"Come over here." She went to him and he placed her on his leg. He brought out a big phone and she was shocked with what she was seeing.

"Do you watch films?"



She shook her head. Mum said it was a waste of money and time.

"We made it look like a film trick, it means it's not real, see, the blood is all fake. He put you to sleep and made it look like you are dead so that Cloud will not look for you. He now brought you to me. My sister dressed you up and placed you in your new room. I have been looking for your mum and I did not know she has my daughter. So I have to protect my daughter from Cloud and Biggi. Do you understand?"

She nodded but she did not understand everything. She had felt pain on her neck. She also knew Uncle Cloud was bad, same with Biggi but she did not understand what he meant that it was a film trick. He kissed her hair.

"Do you like uncle Cloud?"

She shook her head.

"Why?"

"He is bad. Mum said he is forcing her to pay money my dad.." she paused. He had said he was her dad.

"Your other dad?"

She nodded and continued.

"My other dad stole his money and he found my mum and forced her to pay back or he will kill me. He used to hit Mum anytime she tries to prevent him from meeting me. He used to make Biggi stay by our house so Mum cannot run away with me and he used to make Biggi bring me to him and flog me and say Mum offended him. It is very painful,

my back..." she started crying.

He unzipped her gown and she knew he must have seen what Mum had called scars.

He started touching it with his mouth, then he zipped it back and wrapped her in him. He was so big that she could not find herself anymore.

"Sssh, daddy is here. He cannot touch you again. He whipped your back?"

She nodded and sniffed.

"Many times."

"I am going to whip him back and tear his back. I will make sure it is very painful" he said kissing her hair, then her cheek.

She nodded. She would be happy if someone whipped Uncle Cloud. And he was big, he would be able to fight Uncle Cloud.

"Biggi too" she added.

"Biggi is dead and he is on his road to hell."

She gasped and tried raising her head, he allowed her. Biggi had said no one could kill him. He used to tell her how many people he had killed and how everyone was afraid of him. He was always talking about death.

"My brother sent him to hell, he won't hurt you and your mum again."

She nodded. She wished the fire would burn him and it would be painful. He used to beat up people in the compound and he killed a puppy with his hands because the



puppy was making noise. She cried so much as the puppy cried and struggled to be free.

She rested her head back on his chest.

"What of Mum?" she asked raising her head.

"I will go and bring her too."

"Today?"

"No, why are you afraid of your mum?"

'How did he know I am afraid of Mum" she thought.

"Is not her fault, she said it's the drug Uncle Cloud used to give her, it used to make her angry, she said she never want to hit me. It's Uncle Cloud."

He kissed her hair, then used his big hand to clean the tears on her face.

"I know, that's why I cannot bring her now. I will bring her after I have removed all the drugs from her body so she will not be angry with you."

"But will she still be with Uncle Cloud?"

"Yes, for now."

"Can't you do a film trick for her? Uncle Cloud use to treat her bad."

"It does not work like that sweetheart. Your mum is an adult and she needs to know she is free. She needs to know Cloud does not have any more power over her. She will not remember me."

"I don't understand."



"Okay I promise I will do film trick but it will take long before it can work on her but I promise you will see her very soon and she will never hit you again. I will bring her before school resumes. Okay?"

She nodded.

"But where is she now? Does she know I am with you?"

He shook his head.

"She cannot know because it will spoil everything. But you will soon see her. Okay?"

She nodded.

"Now is just dad and daughter."

He kissed her hair and her forehead.

"Did you paint that? I don't have big eyes."

She pointed at the painting of the girl and the boy.

He raised her with him and took her to the canvas.

"That's not you sweetheart, that's your mum and that's me."

"Wow, I look like my mummy. She said there are no pictures, that she cannot remember anything."

"I know Omolara."

"Who told you my name?"



"I am your dad sweetheart." He kissed her cheek and tickled her making her giggle.

"You know your Mum's real names?"

She shook her head.

"Isabella, Omolara Adeola. She gave you her native name without knowing."

"You really know my mum?"

"I told you I have been looking for her, she is my wife. I never knew I will find her with a beautiful princess who loves painting like me and her granddad. I will tell you everything about your mum when she was little like you. Your granddad loved drawing."

"Where is he?"

"Maybe in heaven."

She remembered something.

"Are you my mum's guardian? She used to dream about a guardian."

"She did?"

She nodded.

"I guess so. I am her guardian."

He pulled her to the paintings with different animals.

"Can you paint this cat?" he asked pointing at the dog, then the cat.

She started laughing.



"This is not a cat, it's a dog, then the other one is a cat not a dog, then that is a kangaroo not a hyena."

"Are you sure?" he asked tickling her again.

"Yes" she answered laughing very hard.

NOW.....

{Money does not bring happiness but you will be miserable in your poverty- wrong}

It was past 4:PM when he landed the chopper on the field of their second fortress. He sighted them driving towards the field, their little angels. The adults were not around. They were all on different missions, although Beast and Ghost had said they were on their way back after a successful omega mission. Cindy, Jason's wife was very busy with handling affairs in two of their companies and meeting clients. The evidence of her work was noticeable all over the fortress. Everything a child would see and call heaven could be find in their fortress. Halima, Beast's wife was in her fashion world office. Mena, Wolf's wife was at University of Benin Teaching Hospital. She was a nurse lecturer and Ella had lectures till six. Mama, Beast's second mother travelled to visit one of her twin daughters who recently gave birth. The only baby sitter around was Pearl. She was twelve but had mastered Sabrina's death dance. But the children could handle themselves very well, their only worry was John, big head. He was more than a handful.



Even his grandma had given up on him. The one he listened to was Wolf. He was just a year yet his sixth sense was top notch with his big head like his dad but looked more like John, his late uncle who was Wolf's best friend. John had thrown himself on Wolf seconds before a bomb exploded. John had raised the question on reincarnation from the first day he was born. Al, Beast's daughter had taken after her grandmother but no question was raised like John's case. Jason had concluded that there should never have been a question raised because it was biologically proven that one could resemble a relative, he had said there were bigger mysteries which no one was yet to solve like a certain footballer by name Ozil who had same resemblance with the long dead founder of Ferrari automobile. As for him, he was yet to solve the mysteries his mum gave him to solve from the book of Daniel and he was not ready to add another one that was not beneficial to him, he was happy Jason had been the one to quench the idea that John had been reincarnated. Jason strongly believed in judgment after death. As for John, Wolf's son, he must be the original version of Wolf's mother's blessing. The dude gave his parents a rough ride and his mother had one day told him he would give birth to himself. They had thought she meant Pearl, his first daughter until John was born and his favorite and first language was "no" and only said yes to his dad and Al, but who could say no to Al? In all his thirty six years on earth, he had never seen a child who did not cry when being spanked. He could see him struggling to wrestle control of the steering wheel off Pearl's bigger open car.

"Lara dear, time to meet your sisters and brothers" he said pulling her down from the chopper.

She was already carried away by the things she was seeing. She turned her attention

to the children driving towards the field with their powerful solar battery children car, combined work of Jason, Fast and Beast. She held his hand and he could sense she was worried about the reception she would receive. She had seen the Circle Unit members at the Circle house. It was what he wanted. He needed the three weeks to know her more and to know what she knew about Cloud. He had almost lost it when she told him Cloud used to rape her mum in her presence. There was no way he was going to see it as sex. He was very sure the reason Cloud did not touch her was because he was not a pedophilia. It took a lot of work to debrief her of so many atrocities she had been forced to watch. Now he could bring her to join the family. She had seen their pictures same with the children.

The twins, George and Geoffrey were the first to get to them. Normally, they would rush to him and he would have to lift them even though they were already four. But they acted differently whenever any of them came to the fortress with a stranger, no matter who the person was. This was no different because they blocked Al who was running to meet him. Geoffrey who was over protective of her pushed her behind them as he studied Lara, his hand gloves intact, his tab in his hands.

He squatted and whispered to Lara.

"They are just acting as big brothers, trying to find out if you are a good person. Let's allow them."

She smiled at him. Al tried to peep through the space created by standing behind and in between them. Her cute inquisitive sparkling eyes and chubby cheeks could be seen. George covered the space preventing her from view. There were no words, they just



stared at Lara. His phone blinked and vibrated twice indicating the Circle were online and most likely watching the drama unfolding. He brought out his Circle transmitter and inserted it in his right ear. One of the artificial intelligent birds allocated to the fortress was perching on the helicopter giving those watching a clear view of what was happening.

"Geoffrey, has she not passed yet?" he asked as they shifted to cover AI from seeing Lara or maybe Lara from seeing AI.

Lara smiled and he could interpret her words from the smile. She was five, GG were four, that gave her the upper hand as an adult among children. She saw GG as kids while GG saw AI as a kid. AI saw John as a baby and all saw themselves as a big brother or big sister. The circle never ended because Pearl saw them as babies and to her she was the adult among them. Geoffrey kept staring at Lara while George looked at him for approval.

Finally, Geoffrey nodded to George which was same time Pearl got to them after abandoning the car to John who also had abandoned it and was struggling to come down because he could not drive it, big head.

"Oh my gosh, Lara you are so cute in real life" Pearl said pulling Lara to her.

Immediately, he could feel the tension leaving Lara's body.

"GG, AI, seriously? Come give your new sister a hug" Pearl said but George looked to Geoffrey for approval and finally AI was no longer shielded.

Lara pulled away from Pearl and rushed to hug AI, who wouldn't?



She gave her a peck on her cheek while Al hugged her back.

"You are so cute" Lara said.

"Five years old telling a three year old she is cute, twelve year old telling a five year old she is cute. See upgrade. Now Lara thinks she is big sister. Na wa" he heard Ghost's voice.

"Mark twenty bucks to GG's overprotective syndrome not stopping anytime soon" Fast said.

"On your own. We all know it's not ending anytime soon" Mark replied.

Fast and Mark were currently at Lagos tracking a Lebanese child trafficking group who also trafficked human parts. Once Intel was confirmed, the President had ordered Major to make sure it was a shootout battle and no one should survive. Their corpse would be sent back to Lebanon. From what he could sense, they were back at the underground house. He would bet his head that they were playing their action game.

"Are you my big sister?" Al asked.

That voice could debrief a depressed mind.

"Yes, my name is Lara. Hi, you must be Geoffrey and you must be George." She waved at the twins who were still trying to study her.

"Wrong, I'm George and he is Geoffrey. Just call us GG."

"Come on. Give your sister a hug" Pearl called.



George hugged her for some seconds, then pulled back holding his brother's hand who was still calculating Lara.

"My brother does not do hugs, just Al, Dad, Mum and me, but he likes you. He says you are not trouble."

"When did he say that?" Lara asked.

"Just now, I'm the only one that understands him."

"Me too" Al shouted.

"Yes cutie" George said.

Lara turned to him for an explanation and he just humped his shoulders. He should have briefed Lara on the twins but he was sure George would do a good work because he was yet to understand them. In fact, there was a current argument that Geoffrey did not have autism, his own was beyond autism. The things he could do at four were baffling. He could operate gadgets he was still learning to use and he could read. How? Because he communicated by writing. George was also good in many things and his reflex was perfect. The only difference was they could understand George but not Geoffrey.

"Al did you forget me?" he asked.

Al rushed to him and he raised her up before pulling her to him. Her mum had finally loosed her wool thread. Her hair was long and curly.

"Are you going to stay with us or Al or Pearl or everyone?" George asked.

"I don't know? Can I stay with you?" Lara gave a matured answer.



"Geoffrey wants you to stay all."

"What's that?" Lara asked.

"Wow, Geoffrey likes her" Wolf said same time, he heard gunshots.

Wolf was sent to take down a gang of robbers after the massacre of ten police officers in a shootout with them at Abakiliki, eastern Nigeria. They were about forty three but in just two days, Wolf had sniffed and reduced them to a single digit. No one needed an explanation to his nickname.

"First target in the last hideout down" Wolf said.

"All means we have a long work because we will distribute your clothes in all the houses and you will follow the timetable with them" Pearl answered Lara.

He was sure Lara did not fully understand the explanation but she nodded.

Finally, big head got to them. He was screaming his name in children language and he had to close up the gap, he picked him and raised him up.

"How is Pup today? Did you give anyone trouble?"

He shook his head, then turned to look at the new person Pearl was holding on her shoulder. George was surprisingly holding her hands and whispering something that made her giggle. Geoffrey held AI in front of him.

"Come meet big sister Lara. Lara this is our last baby. Call him Pup or John" he said dropping John close to Lara. John did not accept strangers, rather he fought them, but he was surprised he went to hug her.



"That's a first" Doc joined the conversation.

Many called her Sabrina, her mission name but he preferred calling her Doctor, Doc for short. She was at the Circle house Abuja, monitoring the progress of two injured Special Force officers from the Python Unit who were next after The Circle Unit.

"Hey Sabrina when will I get a first?" Mark asked.

"One two go.." Ghost said.

"Come to Abuja and die, idiot" Doc answered.

Nothing had changed even after five years. He could sense the sexual pull between them but Doc was a hard nut to crack. She had no idea Mark had been without a woman for almost four years because of her. She still believed Mark was joking with her. He would do something about them later. Major had been the obstacle, if not, he would have solved their issue long ago.

"How are you?" Lara asked squatting to hug John back.

"Guys, I want to leave" he said.

"Few seconds away" Beast responded.

"Lara so you take care of your younger ones and Pearl I trust you with them."

"She cannot take care of us, we will take care of her" George answered.

"Are you going?" Al asked.

He nodded.



"When the ladies come, they will sort out your things from the helicopter okay?" he said to Lara, she nodded.

"Geoffrey wants you to come to our underground house. It's where we came out from" George said.

Lara turned to look at him.

"It means they like you because they don't allow others there" Pearl answered for him.

He pulled Lara to him.

"You remember our deal?"

"One drawing every day, you will be back with Mum before I finish the last page of the drawing book. And you will be calling all the time to tell me about Mum's progress."

"Okay, give daddy a kiss."

She kissed his cheek.

"Lara do you know how to use a car?" George asked.

"I'm still learning."

"Okay join me on my own, let's go. We want to show you something."

He noticed Pearl was smiling as she looked at her phone.

"Chatting with Jake again?"

"Stop it Wild" she said locking her phone.



She whispered to him that her dad was listening.

"Tell her I heard that. Well Jake is far away, I have so many things to worry about not a twelve year old having a crush on a seventeen year old far away in London" Wolf said firing two shots simultaneously. They would not know where the shots were coming from.

Jake was George's cousin who was still trying to convince his parents he wanted to come to Nigeria, a country he had never stepped his feet on. He was just like George, a younger version and almost same behavior. He loved remodeling things. George was Jason's best friend who was killed during a mission although, he took a large number with him as escorts. Jason had been the one to contact Jake and he had bonded so well with everyone. Most times, the children communicated life with him with their long and wide TV, which made Jake look like he was with them. Pearl was always talking about him but stopped when Doc told her she was crushing.

"Three down. Just two more to go" Wolf said.

"John, that's not yours" George said.

John had already climbed George's car and was trying to switch it on. He had already succeeded but Geoffrey switched it off using his small tab.

"John come down right now" Pearl shouted.

"No" almost everybody chorused, including Halima, Cindy, Beast, Ghost, Sabrina, Hadiya, Fast, Mark, and the children except for Lara who looked surprised.

It was followed by laughter.



"John, you will soon start driving. Just come down for today. I will give you a new toy"
George pleaded.

"No" everybody said same time with John.

The laughter increased.

"Cutie, please talk to John" George pleaded with Al.

But they were interrupted by the gate opening. John had turned towards the gate even before it opened, the power of his sixth sense was baffling even to Wolf. He wondered where Puppy, their Siberian husky dog was.

"Daddy is back" Al shouted running towards the pickup.

Without parking it, Beast came down and the two met at a middle point. There would be no hugging till their ritual had been performed. He had not been home for two days.

"Who am I seeing?"

"Al."

"Who is Al?"

"Al is Abigail Ifeoma Justice, the one and only princess of the hunter's family, first of her kind after which no other."

"Who is Justice?"

"Beast."

"Who is Beast?"



Edit with WPS Office

"King of the beast with a queen and one and only princess."

"And who is the princess?"

"Me" she shouted jumping up as Beast swept her off the ground, threw her high, caught her and pulled her to him after so many kisses.

"I love you Abigail Ifeoma."

"I love you daddy."

"I love you more, to the moon and back" Beast said kissing her chubby cheek.

He would never get tired watching those two. Five years ago, he wouldn't have believed that this giant and Beast would one day be controlled by Halima, a dark, short and slim lady and a little girl. How times had changed. To think he was same person who almost committed suicide because he felt life was meaningless. What some people just needed was a projection into their future, they would still be alive. Halima had entered Beast's life at his last hopeless moment after losing his first wife to a drug lord. The drug lord and his whole clan were now history.

"It happens all the time. They are always like that" George explained to Lara who was smiling as she watched father and daughter moment. They ran to Beast including Pearl. Beast had saved her from being sent to a pedophile and she had stayed with them till she was sent to Wolf, her dad who had rejected her but ended up refusing to let her out of his sight.

But John did not, as small as he was, he knew the implication of coming down to welcome Beast. He held Lara and went to join them leaving John with the car which he



kept struggling to ignite.

"Good evening Beast" Lara greeted.

She was yet to understand why she could not add Uncle to their name but he knew George would put her through.

"Hi pretty" Beast said pulling Lara to the group hug. Geoffrey stood close after giving Beast a hand glove high five.

Lara had seen him already so there was no fear waves coming from her.

"Daddy where is Ghost?" Al asked before he could ask.

"Tell her I dropped by to pick my love" Ghost answered.

"Or to stalk her, I guess you are resting on a roof waiting for her lectures to be over" Fast said.

"Jealousy, you nor go find your own wife" Ghost answered.

"My wife is outside right now. Got some job to finish in few hours' time' Fast responded.

His wife meant his latest bike collection.

"Ghost went to pick Ella" Beast told Al.

"Okay but when is Wolf coming back because we need to send John back to the Starks and order another one. He is just hmm, Wolf needs to order another one."

Even Major joined in the long laughter.



"Wolf did you hear that? Let's order a smaller head from the Starks this time" Beast said.

"Halima you better prepare to solve this, you started this Stark story, I love the one the Starks sent me, leave my son for me. I still don't understand why you showed them that cartoon. How can a bird send babies to families? Deal with it Halima" Wolf said firing another shot.

"I have nothing to explain, the Stark bird delivers baby. They stopped asking where babies came from after I solved what all of you ran away from. Beast please let's order another baby" Halima said.

"I think you have a new customer Obim, there is no ordering another baby. I love my one and only princess" Beast responded carrying Al to meet John who had been screaming his name but did not want to come down to greet him.

"Puppy is awake" George said.

He followed George's eyes and saw Puppy running towards them from the orchard.

John raised his hand for a high five with Beast, then their head rubbing. Funny two.

"So what did he do this time?" Beast asked.

"This is my car, he wants to drive it" George said.

"John you know you are still too young to drive? Come down" Beast said putting enough command in his voice but John looked at him without an iota of fear.

"No" the children chorused with John.

"You see why we need another one from the Stark" Al said.



"But he listens to you. You tell him. When Wolf comes back, you tell him about the Stark stuff okay?" Beast said and Al nodded.

"John come join me in my car. I will drive you to the underground house" Al said holding John's hand. He looked at her and smiled, then climbed down.

"Case solved, you guys just want to hear him say no. Having fun with my sweet little Pup" Wolf said firing another shot.

"How can a Wolf be lying na. Sweet wetin, pikin when nor dey hear word, big head" Ghost said.

"I'm facing my fears well but you keep avoiding yours on the pretense you want Ella to graduate. I can't wait for little Ghost" Wolf answered Ghost.

"There is no way little Ghost will be like big head" Beast said.

"He doesn't like to be intimidated, that's the Wolf's blood. All targets eliminated. I'm coming home" Wolf said.

But he was going out, it was time to bring his wife home. He gave the children a hug and a kiss but a gloved handshake to Geoffrey.

"Dad come pick me later. Did you hear?" Al instructed Beast.

"Yes ma'am, loud and clear princess" Beast said kissing her forehead, then patting John's head.

She drove off towards the orchard which led to their big underground playground. The twins were already in front with Lara sitting with George. George had to pause for

Puppy to smell Lara. He loved her which was another plus. George continued as the dog ran to meet him. Lara turned and waved at him, he blew her a kiss making her smile. It was now just him, Pearl and Beast and the dog who was throwing his whole weight on him while wagging his tail.

"Hello Puppy, what's up?" he asked patting his head.

He came down and ran to Beast.

"I'm off" he said elbowing Beast and kissing Pearl's forehead."

"Make sure you come back" Pearl shouted behind him.

He nodded but did not turn back. He disconnected from The Circle app.

"So what's with Jake?" he heard Beast asking Pearl.

They were going to offload Lara's goods.

"Don't go there, he is just a friend, am I not supposed to have a friend?"

"Then why are you blushing?"

"No I'm not..."

"Tell me something I'm not seeing. It's not bad to have a crush just don't tell him because...."

He could no longer hear them. He was almost at his Toyota Prado jeep, which Fast had dropped in the compound with all the things he needed. He had a long journey before him. He was going all the way from Benin to Port Harcourt.



He switched on the radio but did not hear anything interesting as he drove out of the compound. He switched on his cassette player which he had made Jason to install for him. He inserted one of the cassettes and hit the steering wheel in resonance with the beat as one of his favorite music started playing. He sang along with Don Williams.

“.....First thing every morning that I do, is start missing you. Some broken hearts never mend, some memories never end, some tears will never dry. My love for you never die...”

“Isabella I’m coming to take you home the Wild’s way. As for Cloud, you are about to play the game of the wild, no rules and no room for the weak” he said increasing his speed and the volume.

(Money does not bring happiness but happiness plus money is pure bliss- Correct.)

THE GAME IS ABOUT TO BEGIN.....

CHAPTER ONE

{The territory of the strong man}

She was riding her new bicycle when she sighted them, the bullies in her

neighborhood. Everybody used to fear them because their fathers were bad men. Papa had warned her to avoid them by all means, she halted her bicycle and tried to turn back but they had seen her and were already on her.

"Hey little girl, who dash monkey banana?" one of them asked pulling her bicycle.

"Leave me alone, my daddy bought it for me" she shouted trying to move it forward. But she knew it was actually Guardian who gave Papa money to buy the bicycle.

"She is the bicycle repairer's daughter that used to paint" the one on black shirt said.

"My kid brother will need this bicycle. Little girl come down. I'm taking it with me" Ojo said.

She knew him because he was their leader and she had seen him collect their neighbor's shoes.

"No, it's my own" she shouted trying to wrestle the bicycle from Ojo.

He slapped her and pushed her down. She hit her head on the coal tar, the back of her hand got scraped making her to cry from the pain.

"You can cry all you want, if you are mad go and bring your father. My father rules this neighborhood. I can do whatever I want" Ojo said pulling the bicycle with him while his four friends followed him.

She cried back home, holding her bleeding hands. Papa was not in the house, she went to the shop. He was painting and Guardian was with him. He always came to paint with Papa and he always said he would protect her and guard her. He was the first to get to



her before Papa.

"What happened?" he asked inspecting his hands.

"Ojo, he pushed me and took my bicycle" she cried.

He pulled her to him and tapped her back. She felt so warm. She wanted to stay in that warmth forever.

"I told you not to ride close to their place" Papa shouted.

"I did not, they were the ones there, it was not their place" she answered.

"Papa Lara please she needs methylated spirit to treat her wound. Can you get it please, don't shout, she is just four" Guardian said.

Papa nodded, then checked his pocket. He brought out some money and left the shop. Guardian pulled her away from him but she wanted to go back to his warmth.

"Sssh, where do you feel pain?"

"My hand and my head" she said showing him her hand and touching the back of her head with the other hand.

"You want me to remove the pain?"

She nodded.

He took her injured hands and used his lips to go through it. The pain stopped making her gasps. He pulled her to him and placed his palm on her injured head. She felt warmth inside her body, the pain also disappeared making her gasps again.



"How did you do it?"

"I told you I'm your guardian. I can take it away from you. Don't tell your Papa, okay?"

She nodded.

"Do you want your bicycle back?"

She nodded.

"Okay let's go" he said holding her hand but she pulled back.

"They are five and they are bad, they will beat you" she protested afraid for him.

"Do you trust me?"

She nodded. She trusted him more than Papa.

"Then follow me, you need to see what I am going to do to anybody who touches you. I don't want you to ever fear anybody."

She nodded but she was still afraid for him. She directed him to where the incident happened. They were not at the same place but further down under a mango tree, the bicycle was there with two shoes and a big ball they must have collected from other people. She tried to pull Guardian back but he pulled her forward.

"Stay here and watch" he said.

He walked the remaining steps to the boys.

"What is this fool doing here? Don't you know you are trespassing?" Ojo asked.



They were all still sitting down.

"This is a free zone" Guardian answered him.

"Well this free zone is now occupied by me so vamoose."

She did not want the bicycle again, she was afraid they would beat up Guardian, she did not want him to get hurt. He did not leave but stared at them. He did that to her all the time and he used to act like he knew what she was thinking about.

"Are you still here?" Ojo shouted standing up, his four friends also stood up but Guardian did not even shake, he still looked at them.

"You are twelve she is just four. Only cowards terrorize the weak, you guys are cowards. Now five of you want to fight an eleven year old same time because you are cowards, none of you can face me one on one."

There was something to his voice, it was making her afraid. She noticed even Ojo and his friends must have felt same thing because they were acting like they were afraid.

"I am no coward, I am powerful. I will face you one on one and beat you so much that you will run to your daddy" Ojo shouted but he was shaking, same with others.

"I'm not a coward like you. If I face just you, it will make me a coward. I am going to break the five of you, not because I am strong but because you touched her. Nobody touches her" Guardian said pointing at her but his voice was making her shake with fear. He look at her and she suddenly felt calm and safe.

"I am not a coward" Ojo shouted raising his hands to hit Guardian but he blocked him



using his elbow, then he punched Ojo's jaw and almost same time, he punched the chest of the one on black. He was raising his hands to hit Guardian but held his chest and fell to the ground. Guardian pushed Ojo to the one on the ground, then kicked the one on yellow on his stomach. The one on green picked a stick from the ground to hit Guardian but Guardian shifted without looking and the stick hit the last one on brown on his head. The boy screamed but Guardian had taken the stick from the surprised one on green and used it on the one on yellow who was holding his stomach. Everything happened like it was a flash. He started hitting all of them as they shook from fear. He dropped the stick on the ground.

"Can you now feel it? Fear can make someone shake but that is not what you are feeling now. Right now you are feeling terror, it makes someone unable to fight. I can make you feel more than that" he said pulling Ojo up.

Ojo was so afraid. He dragged Ojo to him.

"Beg her before I make you feel more than what you are feeling. It will make you choke to death. Tell her sorry" he said forcing Ojo to kneel.

"Sorry" Ojo stammered.

"Shout it" Guardian said, his voice made her shake with fear.

"I'm sorry, I will never take your things, I'm sorry" Ojo shouted.

It was then she noticed they had attracted crowd both young and old. They were all talking amongst themselves. She could not hear what they were saying.

"Lara, do you want me to beat him again?" Guardian asked.



She shook her head. Ojo was already crying and she knew he would never touch her again because of her guardian.....

She woke up trying to understand her environment, it took more than ten seconds before she realized she had been dreaming. It had never been like that before, never. It was so vivid and the little girl was the exact replica of her Lara. She started crying. From the day she had returned to see blood in the room with a hard drive which showed the video of Lara being slaughtered and a message on how her body was still needed, she had been having nightmares upon nightmares.

It had always been about a guardian, a dream about a guardian but she would not remember anything once she woke up, just that name stuck because Lara had been the one to tell her she was always screaming about a guardian in her sleep. Lara had said she was always calling him to come back and not to leave her.

But since Lara was murdered, she had been having series of nightmares of Lara and a guardian and some other confusing scenes but this was the first real one. It was so real that she almost felt she was Lara.

"Lara, I'm sorry. I'm sorry for hurting you so badly. I wish I can turn back time, I will not lay my hands on you. I hurt you so badly and kept blaming you for my predicament. I'm sorry, I'm sorry I could not protect you. I'm sorry I brought you to this miserable world" she cried.

She could have borne the pain of losing her if she had treated her better than others, if she had ever been a mother. But she had no right to mourn her because she was part of her daughter's nightmares, no little girl deserved to live and die like her daughter. She



was in an ocean of misery. Cloud had tried all his best to track down her killer to no avail. He had beaten and interrogated suspects but nothing had come out of it. She just did not understand why Cloud's enemy would think Lara was special to Cloud. Okay she was a bit special because he had been using her to make her work for him. But the little girl was innocent, killing her did not punish Cloud in anyway because she was still hooked to Cloud. She was yet to pay back the five million naira Cloud said Ade stole from him and she could not leave because she could not go a day without shooting drugs, she would die. Cloud had introduced her to drugs and had made her a captive to it. And she had drown herself in a lot of it since Lara's murder.

She could never leave Cloud, there was no way she would get those expensive drugs. She was bound to him forever. She knew Cloud had planned it from the beginning but there was nothing she could do about it. She would go crazy if she did not get her shot in an hour's time before her night's performance. She most times took the shot in Cloud's room after giving him her body. For a long time, Cloud was no longer compelling or threatening her to sleep with him, she was now the one stripping and waiting for him because without it, she knew she would not get her second shoot which Cloud did himself during sex, except on days he was extremely busy. He would just give it to her to shoot by herself. She was Cloud's forever captive and she had accepted her fate.

The other option had been suicide but Lara had kept her going. Now Lara was gone but she wanted to live, she was not ready to give up on life. Her life was miserable yet she wanted to live and she would do anything to survive. She was even lucky because some of the other addicts like her paid, they did not get the drugs for free. It made her the most hated worker. They saw her as Cloud's special mistress. She should be happy she

was occupying the position many wanted. But she could not, not when her daughter she never showed loved was murdered just three weeks ago, not when she had to go through Cloud sleeping with her. She never understood what excited the others Cloud had slept with because she had felt better with Ade, which was nowhere exciting as girls around her had described. Ade was just one of those guys she met while working as a receptionist in one hotel. She did not like him but he had money and he was a form of insurance and she had wanted to be counted among those with a man. She never enjoyed sex with him and she had lost interest and broken up with him, only to discover she was pregnant. Ade did not want her to abort the baby, so she moved in with him. Life was not exciting, it was just normal with the absence of a past.

Then during Lara's first birthday, they had been attacked and Ade was brutally murdered. She had been kidnapped from Ilesha and taken to Cloud who told her she had to pay the five million naira Ade stole from him. That was how her captivity to Cloud had started. Now she could not leave him.

She gathered herself after crying her eyes out. Cloud had no emotions, he had even given her two days to mourn after moving her to another self-contain close to his house, he gave her drugs and that was all. She had to resume her strip work after two days and when she had cried on stage, he had pulled her to one of the motel rooms and beaten her up.

"I know your daughter died, I gave you two days off, that was a lot of money. Half of the men come here just to see you strip and tweak, I lost a lot of money. It's money Joan, money. You still owe me three million and if you ever think you are free to leave, then



just pay me for all the drugs I've been giving you for free. A shoot is twenty thousand and for three years, you've been taking twice a day, calculate and add the three million you are still owing then you can go. Don't try fuck me up" he had shouted stripping her off her last clothes and raping her till he was satisfied. She had felt pain throughout that night and in the day when she was supposed to sleep, she had started having nightmares of Lara but in a weird way.

She was ready for the day after donning her make-ups and short gown. It was weekend, the days when the club welcomed massive crowd. Oil workers, even white men who had employed Cloud as protection visited the club mostly to watch and salivate over her. She must be on her best performance or Cloud who make her beg and crawl to get a shoot in the morning.

Cloud's big mansion was just ten minutes' drive from her current house. She went straight to his room amidst the lustful stares from his security men. Cloud was not around but he had dropped the shoot and a note that he was going to be having some VIPs and she must give them her best performance and he would have her after the night's show.

She quickly shot the dope and sat down on the bed panting, eyes closed as the fire, then ecstasy burned through her system. She felt happy and free, no thoughts about her current predicament. She laid on the bed for few minutes then stood up when she felt the drug had ran its course. She wished the feeling would last forever, reality sucked.

The club was filled up and some were already on the dance floor dancing to Nicki Minaj's song. It was already dark outside and she glimpsed Cloud sitting on one of the

rolls of black cushion chairs which were placed by the walls of the club for those who wanted to sit down. She saw two Indians and one American sitting beside him. They felt safer being under Cloud's watch than the military. They just paid him lots of money and they were safe from petty kidnappers who knew the danger of trespassing Cloud. Death was a gift he gave to them after much begging. She would never forget what Cloud had done to the last undercover police officer caught on his territory. He had even been a bar attender for three months before his cover was blown by Cloud's Intelligence unit. Cloud had peeled his nails with a sharp stone and pulled out his teeth with a spanner before slicing him bit by bit. Cloud had forced her to watch after flogging Lara and raping her in front of Lara. He said she flirted with one of his big drug customers, a popular musician who visited the club.

Cloud looked at her and nodded, a sign of approval for her choice of clothes and a sign for her to give her best. She entered the dressing room, ignored the murderous looks from the other girls, checked herself in the mirror, then walked into the club using the restricted door. She signaled to the technician before climbing the stage where Amara was trying so hard to impress the guest. She raised her hands and clapped twice producing a smoke and rainbow sparkles of light. She held one of the poles on stage and it was immediately raised high. It was show time. She danced, tweaked and stripped slowly and seductively.

She was already used to many men looking at her lustfully as she twisted her body to the tune of the music. Cloud was watching the way his VIP guests were salivating over her, his possession. He always made sure to tell them she was off limits. She could see his soulless guards at every corner of the club, they were looking deadly with their

weapons.

It was just another day, another hopeless day, another eventless day like all the other days since Lara was brutally murdered, but then, he walked into the club, he radiated an aura of power and danger. She was not the only one feeling it because Cloud turned to study him as he ordered a drink from the counter. He sat down and pretended he was not attracting inquisitive stares from Cloud and his men. He turned and looked straight at her, she missed her steps as soon as their eyes met. Either she was hallucinating or she was now fully crazy because she could almost hear him saying "you are mine." And not just that, she was feeling a sensation in her stomach. She felt a very strong pull to him, not just a pull but a serious sexual pull almost like she was in a trance. She shook her head to pull out of the trance when she noticed Cloud's angry stare. It took all her will before she could force herself to back the invader. He was huge but not fat, she could see the defined muscles of his hands and his chest. His black T-shirt clung to him making the muscles visible. She shook her head again, she was putting the man in danger, she knew Cloud was already planning what he was going to punish her with for misbehaving, she would survive but that huge man would not if Cloud decided to focus on him. He might be physically strong but he was just one man in the midst of wild creatures. She felt a powerful desire to protect him. That powered her will to ignore the feelings he was rousing in her and to focus on giving her best performance. She signaled for Abbey, the technician to give her a hot music. The dude understood her because Shakira's 'Hips don't lie' started playing.

The loud cheers from the crowd told her she was heating them up. She turned and cat-walked down the stage dancing towards Cloud, she could see the animalistic lust in

his eyes. She stopped at half a foot from him, backed him and started tweaking the exact moment Shakira entered the chorus of the song. She knew Cloud was standing because she felt him close to her, he pulled her to him and started rocking her from behind amidst the crowd's loud cheers. But then, it happened again, a deep baritone voice in her head.

"You are mine Bella."

CHAPTER TWO

{Undercover in the territory of the strong man}

He had felt it the moment he entered the club, a surge of power. It became a zap of electricity which he felt down to his groin the moment he sighted her. He knew that was going to happen, he had dressed for it. It was a bit painful but he felt alive for the first time in more than twenty one years. It was as if he just came out of a dark tunnel into sunlight and he had to steady himself from the sharp influx of light. For a moment, he lost control and he knew many felt it and Bella would feel it more. That was not a good way to introduce himself, it could make Cloud feel threatened too early. He quickly regained his composure and went to the counter. The bar attender saw him as trouble but was a bit distracted when he ordered for any non-alcoholic drink which he thought did not fit his statue. The Circle were not allowed to take alcohol, their sober status must be hundred percent, twenty four seven. He felt the inquisitive stares of Cloud and his securities, they were trying to figure him out and there was a unifying wave coming from all of them.



'This guy must be trouble.'

Just that few seconds' loss of control had given him away as no ordinary guests. He started figuring their positions using the waves they were sending. There were so many emotions speaking to him but he was grateful to Major who had brutally trained him to be able to home into a specific target amidst different waves sounding on his mind. It was even easier to figure out their positions because most dancers and clubbers were already consumed with lust and the only thing ringing in their body was sex. He counted twenty in the large club, which could hold up to three hundred people. That was much and the confidence they were releasing should mostly be from their sophisticated weapons. He had counted twenty three outside and many others scattered around the club. He relaxed his mind and focused on the reason he came to the club, it turned out she also wanted a glimpse of him. Their eyes met and the zap was more powerful than the first one, one good reason why he had sat down. He tried to find out if it still worked, he located the pull like before and it was there. The same surge and pull he had when he had first sighted her in her father's shop.

He was just eleven, three months to his twelfth birthday. Then it was just his mum who was aware of what he could do and it was not too pronounced until he felt energized and powerful the moment he walked into the shop. It was his third visit and he had sat down as usual to watch her father paint. The man had been wary of him because of his father but had let him watch him painting. She was with him eating yam and palm oil. It was as if he could hear her talking yet she was not. What he was sure of was he felt extremely protective of her and his first physical contact with her had been horrifying because he noticed he could actually read her mind, she was wishing she had a bicycle

but was afraid her father would beat her up if she requested for one. He had gone home shaking and had told his mum he was a demon. But after explaining in details how he felt and what he heard her think, his mum had said he might be her guardian and protector and maybe his wife in future, she had said that last part jokingly but he had taken it seriously. Within that month, he discovered he could somehow know what someone was thinking if he was focused on the person but not as serious as Bella's case. With time, he discovered he could absorb her pain to his. He had tried it when he noticed she was feeling headache, then tried it again when some fools had taken her bicycle and injured her hand. That was the day he made up his mind to take her with him and also the day he made up his mind to protect the two most important people in his life because even before the incident, his dad was already planning to visit the man who was teaching his heir how to paint, a waste of time. He had attempted and succeeded in creating a unique connection with her. He had recognised her immediately he saw her picture, he was hundred percent sure she was the one and the ring on her finger confirmed it, she still had the ring and it was no longer a necklace.

He followed the connection and sent a message to her.

"You are mine." He watched her keenly and knew she heard him, it had distorted her steps and he felt Cloud's anger towards her. But something else happened. She backed him, made the technician to change the music to a hot one but her actions were all because of him. She was afraid for him, his Bella, his Lara was trying to protect him from Cloud. As she tweaked, wriggled and twisted her body to the tune of the music, he felt her trying to doubt her sanity, the crowd were already affected and the lustful stares from many men was disturbing, he tuned every wave off and followed that special



connection to listen to her, his Bella. She was still worried about him, he watched her catwalk to Cloud who was already carried away, Cloud had completely forgotten about him, his focus was totally on her as she backed him and tweaked for his view. He felt her body revolt against Cloud's contact with her, how could he be angry with her? She was doing it to distract Cloud even when she had no knowledge of who he was, she followed her instinct to protect him. He followed the connection and sent her another message.

"You are mine Bella."

He felt her reaction and her doubt about her insanity. She thought she was going crazy.

"You are not crazy my love."

She shot her eyes as if that would restore what she was now seeing as insanity. He felt her shake from his invasion and decided to let her be. But with the way Cloud was behaving, he might not have a word with him because he had already made up his mind to close it for the day and leave with Bella. He decided to do something. He let out a little wave of power to find its way to Cloud the moment the music ended. The club was already reducing because couples were leaving, he knew most were going to quickly book one of the motel rooms connected to the club, although from their actions, he knew most wanted their girl to be Bella. Bella cat-walked back to the stage as another music started. Cloud was still debating whether to pull her away or to take care of the new person which was him. He felt it the moment Cloud made his decision, he did not like the threat coming from him and he needed to handle business himself before taking Bella away. His plan worked.



He did not need to raise his head to look to know he was being escorted by two of his guards. He opened his mind and sensed their weapons, one had two pistols in both sides of his pocket, a dagger in his left shoe and what felt like laser knife. Cloud's men had laser knives. The other had just a pistol and daggers in his shoes and belt then Cloud had just a pistol, he felt secured because he had snipers who he felt would take out an intruder within seconds.

Cloud sat down on a stool by his right, he felt him turn towards Bella, he just couldn't wait to take her away, the things he would have to endure, this was when he needed to exercise all the patience he had because thinking of what Cloud would do to Bella later on was setting him off.

'Patience' he said to himself.

"You are new here" he heard Cloud's voice.

He turned to look at him, then nodded.

"I hope you are not trouble? I have been having a lot these period."

He studied him, this was the point of the game, the most important part. Cloud must be made to hear what he wanted to believe. It looked like he was going to have another Kiko. The language Cloud's body was speaking was loud and clear. He already believed him to be an undercover agent and he did not blame him. What else could he be? Oil workers did not look huge and balanced.

"Yeah and we've seen your reply, and we heard you Cloud. The last two troubles you dealt with her half way into the underworld."



He felt his security men locating their guns. One cocked it but positioned it in way that the clubbers would not notice there was trouble. Cloud started laughing. He let him and knew what he was going to say even before he opened his mouth.

"Is it that you are a fool or you don't understand what you mean by that answer?"

"I guess we are both confused here, can you rephrase your question bluntly?" he asked.

Cloud started laughing, the second one brought out his gun. He felt him give a signal and he just knew someone was getting ready to put him in the line of his snipes cope.

"That sounds better why waste my time when I have something on my mind? Okay, some fucking soldiers are the latest to enter my territory, that was like four weeks ago, that was after a foolish police officer came to work for me. Those soldiers are damn lucky they escaped. Right now I am trying to trace another enemy who murdered a little girl. So which of the trouble are you?"

"Oh, so there was no confusion. I still have same answer, we saw what you did to our men and congratulations, they were not just soldiers, they were Special Force soldiers. Very important to the president, so you've caught the president's interest. I was sent to come check you out. To understand how powerful you are, to find what others could not find and to make sure no military officer gets hurt again, that's if you are found wanting. I guess that's a long and clear explanation, what do you think?"

He looked at him and started laughing, then paused.

"You are fucking serious?" he asked but he still felt he was joking.

"Did you hear this nigga? He said he came to take me out, like he is a soldier and came



to investigate me and take me out" he said to his men. They laughed with him.

"And you look damn serious, you are either joking or you must be the dumbest undercover agent I have ever seen in my whole fucking thirty six years on earth."

And all he could just think was, the game couldn't have been better and even.

"Not as dumb as your five snipers on the roof positioned near some peepholes. Do you realize just one is paying attention to you right now, the other four are consumed with that sexy striper, well who wouldn't be. And how can you point your gun with the aim to shoot without cocking it. But your twenty three men outside are clueless like your security checks at your door. One would wonder how I was able to enter with my weapons."

They stopped laughing and the one he was talking to cocked his gun and pushed it to his waist.

"Good, exactly what you should have done. Like I said Cloud, shooting two Special Force soldiers just caught the attention of the president and he demanded that the best unit should take over."

This time, Cloud brought out his pistol and pointed it at his stomach, almost to his groin, not the best of place to get shot, that was one pain he did not want to explore and not at this point when he was already feeling a pain there.

"Then it's confirmed, you are the dumbest undercover agent ever and I wonder how the president will feel if one of his best soldiers gets sent back to him few hours after entering my territory."



"It is important you don't find out how he will feel man. You don't want to become history too soon because I am the last agent he will ever send, if the special force is visiting here again, it will not be for an undercover, it will be an all-out war. And don't give me bullshit about how powerful you are, you won't survive the invasion Cloud. I just don't want any more killings hence I came myself. At this moment, there should be a compromise to avoid bloodshed, although that's not all what brought me here."

"What?" he said pushing the gun to his groins, he had even cocked it.

He wanted to bring it out himself but he knew the interpretation they would give if he dipped his hands in his pocket.

"Hey you check what I have to offer, it's in my right jean pockets" he said to the one with the laser knife.

He looked to Cloud for direction, Cloud nodded. The laser guy dipped his hands in his pocket and came out with a syringe of cocaine. He gave it to Cloud. Cloud took it and studied it.

"Like I said, I had to do something that would benefit all" he said.

Cloud was still very skeptical. Cloud looked at him like he had already figured him out.

"How did a self-acclaimed best soldier get his hands on this?"

Cloud asked turning the syringe in one hand and pushing his gun to his stomach with the other hand.

"We've stopped tons of drugs from getting in and out of Nigeria and the last was



approximately worth one billion naira, just that we reported it's worth twenty million naira."

Cloud started laughing.

"So what do you say? I have a two months ultimatum to find evidence against you and troops will be at your doorstep, if I die, troops will be here earlier than expected and you have an idea what omega means to Special Force?"

His body language said he wanted to know.

"It means no arrest, shoot to kill but I can make that go away, just a report and a scape goat to link to the crimes around here and case will be closed and may not be opened in many years to come."

"And what's the deal?"

"It's not a deal, I don't do deals. I play games. Most times, I play winner takes it all but I found something that pique my interest and I'm ready to bend the rules."

"I own this territory, I don't play games, I make deals and eliminate threats. I'm not buying into your fucking omega shit and president nonsense. I don't need an extra meeting with you to figure out the category you belong. You are just a hungry soldier who wants to get extra from the meager money he receives, who wants to have luxury you can't afford so you play dirty with both sides. I guess you most have many top officials under your blackmail list, it's so evident from your confidence. I have worked with many corrupt soldiers and I have many on my payroll but you sound different, so confident you won't be found out and you won't be court-martialed. Let me guess, you



must have blackmailed your commander to send you here because you believe you can make the money you dream of here.”

“And is that correct? Can I make money I dream of here?”

“It depends on how much you have to offer and how much you want to collect and also how you make the deal, most get greedy and get their hands too dirty and end up dead.”

“Let me know the rules of the game then.”

He wanted to counter him, he could feel it but he suddenly changed.

“I think I like that word, rules of the game, I prefer it to a deal.”

He looked at his men who nodded in agreement.

“I make the rules and you play by it and you may end up dead if you don’t keep to the rules. How much of these do you have to offer?”

“Tons and even the dry ones.”

“For what price.”

“No monetary price.”

“What do you mean?”

“I meant what I said, I want to be done with everything within a week and I have just one request.”

“What’s that?”



"Her" he said pointing at Bella.

She was already exhausted, she danced slowly to the tune of the music currently playing. It was way past midnight yet a quarter of the crowd still remained, many already drunk. He had seen the sign that the club closes by 12:AM on normal days but it was all night on weekends. From the little Intel they had gathered, Bella worked till 1:AM on weekends. It was already 12:50AM, almost her closing time. He opened their connection and sent waves of strength her way. She was not expecting the sudden invasion, she turned to locate him but quickly turned back after seeing Cloud with him. The next thing he felt was her fears. She was afraid for him, she felt she did not do enough work to protect him, she also could not understand why she felt the need to protect him.

"Because I'm all yours Bella, it's normal."

He felt her gasps but she struggled to remain composed. He felt her trying to test her sanity, she wanted to see if she could talk back to him. He pulled back immediately, this was not the right time. Everything happened in seconds. Cloud turned to look at him, his mind was all confused and filled with different thoughts, he was thinking of the best way to reply his absurd demand.

"Joan, you want to give me millions worth of drugs for her?"

"You should know I'm weird by now, I don't like beating around the bush. I am going to tell you the truth."

Cloud looked at him, a sign to continue.

"I have plans of taking millions to add to the ones I have already amassed. Well, you

should have an idea how I got them. But I have one issue, that's women stuff, I have never felt alive, the only thing I am missing. But I felt alive for the first time the moment I saw her and all I have been thinking is I will do anything to get my hands on her. I have already given up on my issue, none of my teams know about it. Right now, I don't mind giving you all the drugs I came with plus money to have her. I don't know how but she just resurrected my dead member and I'm like this was not a coincidence, it's more than luck. Forget money men, she is right now worth more than money. The feeling is intoxicating, I want her mad."

He homed his senses to the three men, he needed more than their body message. He wanted to know their inner thoughts. The two guards were between laughing at his predicament and pitying him. The laser guy was remembering his last sex with one of the stripers and he could not imagine what being impotent felt like. He homed in to Cloud and got floods of information. Cloud once had an impotent uncle who got excited with children. He had one day caught him raping a ten years old daughter of his maid. His uncle had explained and paid him a lot to keep quiet. Cloud had been sick few years ago and it had temporally made him impotent, he did not want to think of it and so many other floods of memories. Cloud believed him hundred percent because he too felt more alive with Bella. He quickly withdrew, there was a limit to what he could bear, there was no way he was going to follow Cloud's flash memories of raping Bella, he might end up doing something stupid. But that was a big issue because Cloud was not going to let Bella go. He was not just holding Bella for gain but for pleasure. His game plan for the first time had just been messed up because he told Cloud he was impotent and Bella made him feel potent because he wanted to give Cloud something to think about,

he wanted to see if Cloud would place Bella as last option to use against him because he could immediately rescue Bella but he was now sure that was no gonna happen because she was also a treasure to Cloud.

"Not gonna happen, she is no go area, you can see but you can't touch her that's is my number one rule and I won't hesitate to blow your head off if you cross that line. Your body found the wrong girl. But I have a better offer."

He listened to his body language more than his words. He was thinking of how much he could gain from getting drugs from him at a cheaper price. He was saying the truth about working with corrupt soldiers, that had somehow paved way for him. Cloud was not willing to miss the opportunity of having the military's focus away from him. Although he did not believe the undercover command came from the president, he believed he was sent by the military and if he could strike a good deal with him, he would not just enjoy being off the radar of the military, he would also make money from the drugs he would supply. He could sense Cloud was looking for another way.

"I will see some of the dopes you have to offer, then I will give you money, then give you a free pass to some of my stripers and hot call girls, try them out."

"I don't...."

"I have told you what I can give, my territory my rules. Go think about it, come back with another offer but not her. Don't forget I will be watching you, don't mess with me."

He removed the gun from his stomach, then stood up.

"What do you say soldier?"

"Just call me Wild."

That got to Cloud, he felt like he should have thought of that name.

"So what do you say Wild?"

"I will come back tomorrow with a better offer. There was no winner and no loser but no compromise. Let's see what card we can put on the table, let's hope my next offer will be a win win situation."

"Let's hope there is nothing hidden in your words and let's hope you won't try mess up with me, your life depends on playing to the rules of the game. Hope you don't mind my men tailing you to your place, since we are all about truth."

He humped his shoulders. Cloud nodded to the laser guy. He walked to Bella who was already coming down from the stage. He slapped her on her buttocks and whispered something to her ears. He did not hear what he said because he did not want to, there was a limit to what he should know or else he would destroy everything. He knew exactly what Cloud was doing, he was stamping his claim but what Cloud did not realize was Bella's body revolted against his touch, Cloud did not know because Bella was pushing her body to him. Cloud gave him a warning stare and took Bella out.

"Just a little while Bella." He made sure his message was soothing. He felt her stir, a sign she got the message, he pulled out before she could attempt to confirm her sanity by replying. It would destabilize her and Cloud might hurt her. Cloud gave him a last warning stare as they disappeared through the restricted door. If only Cloud knew there were no rules to the game of the wild because losers did not complain of being cheated

because either one won or died, he came to win. The game had begun and he needed to arrange the cards thrown to him by Cloud.

{Undercover mission generally means acting who you are not. Hell no, the best undercover is to present who they think you really are because they will never believe whoever you present yourself as- Wild.}

CHAPTER THREE

{Some nightmares are better than reality}

Guardian was packing her clothes, Papa was trying to stop him but Guardian did not want to listen to Papa.

"Papa Lara it is not about the boys who injured Lara it's about my dad. You have no idea what he is planning to do to you and Lara just because he was told I was learning how to paint. I can't let him hurt Lara" Guardian said.

He was through with packing her clothes, she still did not understand why Papa was afraid of him. He was a boy, Papa was a man.

"Lara" Guardian called squatting to her height.



"I want you to come stay with me, so I can protect you and keep you close. Do you want to?"

She looked at Papa who was shaking his head. She wanted to follow Guardian anywhere because she knew she would never feel pain because Guardian would take it away and he would also beat up anyone who would try to hurt her. But Papa did not want.

"I've heard about the rumor of what your father did to your mum, how you were born and what he always do to you, how are you going to protect us? I knew you were trouble from the day you entered my shop. I shouldn't have let you paint" Papa said. Papa was looking scared.

Guardian started pulling off his shirt. He turned showing his back to Papa. Papa gasped, she wanted to see what Papa saw but Guardian turned away from her and wore his shirt.

"They are not rumors, everything is true. I meant what I said Papa Lara. My father is planning to visit your shop and it's not a good news. I have to do something and you need to trust me."

"What can an eleven years do against a dangerous drug lord?"

"I'm almost twelve, I will be twelve tomorrow, you need to trust me. Just stay in your house for now. I need to take Lara with me. I won't allow him hurt her. Please."

Papa started speaking Yoruba placing his hands on his head. He was so scared, he kept saying he should have avoided the trouble.

"Please" Guardian pleaded.



"What can I say? I am already finished whichever way."

"Thank you Papa Lara. I promise she won't get hurt. Lara let's go" Guardian said holding her hands.

"I can't believe I'm listening to an eleven years old boy. What kind of trouble is this, where will I run to?" she heard Papa mourning in Yoruba as they got to the door.

Guardian tied her bag on a bicycle carrier, then placed her on the seat. He joined her and rode it for some time before they got to a big gate with scary men standing by it. They looked at her as they opened the gate for Guardian. She became afraid but suddenly felt safe.

The compound was so big and the houses were also big but the men around the compound were looking very scary. Guardian drove to the smaller house. Another scary man was blocking his path.

"Ola your father has been looking for you. He wants to see you now." The voice of the man was also scary.

Guardian turned the bicycle and rode to the bigger house without answering the man.

"Hey, do you trust me?" Guardian asked after bringing her down.

She nodded.

"Then don't be afraid. I won't let anyone touch you."

She took a glance at the scary men carrying gun and walking around the compound. She knew it was called gun because some of the children in their compound had the small

one they used to play actor and boss. They were big and many. Guardian would not be able to fight them but she still nodded. He took her hands and made her walk with him to a big door. Two big men were standing behind it with their long and big guns. They shifted for Guardian to enter, she was so afraid. She was supposed to feel something Guardian used to do to calm her but Guardian must have forgotten to do it, he too must be afraid. She should have listened to Papa.

There were more big men inside a very big room with lots of beautiful chairs and shining tables. There was one big chair close to a wall. Other chairs were like a circle around it. One big man was sitting on the big chair. He was putting on shinning yellow shirt but forgot to button up because his chest was opened and there were lots of chains hanging on his neck. One of the chains was touching his navel and it had a small gun dangling from it. His legs were placed on a stool. Guardian looked so much like him. There was a woman sitting close to him, she was not looking happy, she was looking scared. She was afraid of the man and the men standing behind him and other's sitting around. There was a powder on a large plate close to him, he must have rubbed it on his nose because she could see some of it had stained him there. She grabbed Guardian's hand and pushed closer to him.

"I thought I told you never to step out of the palace without my permission" the man shouted.

His voice was very scary, she grabbed Guardian's waist when the man looked at her. Guardian did not answer, instead he looked around the room the way he used to look at her, the way he looked at Ojo and his friends.

"Answer me" the man shouted pulling a wire from the side of his seat. She saw the woman looking at Guardian, she was muttering something to him and she was shaking badly.

"I had a deal to offer before but I think I now have a better deal."

The man stood up, he was very angry and he was going to use that wire on them. She held on to Guardian and started crying.

"If you know you are about to die few minutes from now will it change anything?" She did not just understand why Guardian's voice was so calm, he was not afraid.

The man did not move, he just stood there.

"I asked a question young man" the man shouted.

"And I'm telling you that you have a bigger problem because five of your men are already planning your funeral. If you doubt me take that drink and die."

The man stared at Guardian, then went back to his seat.

"I trust my men more than you who have sworn to kill his father. I am your father, you can't play pranks on me. You want to protect the bicycle repairer from me, not gonna happen. I'm giving you twenty four strokes for disobeying me and I'm going to throw whoever you came with to the dogs" the man said looking at her.

She pushed herself to Guardian's back as she shook from fear.

"I hated and I still hate you, but I know my mum and I are not also safe. If they succeed in killing you, I will be next and I don't want to think about what they are planning to do



with my mum.

"So you heard them planning to poison me same time I planned to visit that nobody teaching you how to draw?"

The man asked.

"No, they just told me.."

"No, Ola don't, please don't" the woman shouted standing up. She looked like she wanted to run to Guardian but she did not. She just stood there shaking her head.

"What am I missing?" the man asked looking at the woman who was already crying and shaking her head.

"Ola you promised" she cried.

"Mum you've protected me enough, it's my turn now" Guardian said to the woman.

She was Guardian's mum. She did not have a mum. Papa said her mum was in heaven.

"Can the two of you say something" the man shouted standing up. He was so big.

"I already answered you, they just told me. They poisoned your drink and they are working with your rivals to bring you down. One of them is behind you" Guardian said making the man to turn.

It happened so fast, like she was blinking. As the man turned Guardian picked a small gun that was on the shinning table close to him, pointed it towards the man and fired, then turned and fired three times at three other people. She screamed as the men fell,

blood flowing out of their body.

"What the fuck?" the man shouted.

She took a peep at him and was shocked to see that the man was afraid. He was with his small gun but was shaking.

"Everyone lie down" the man shouted.

He started pointing the gun at different directions. She saw some of the men outside running inside.

"Lord what is going on?" one of them asked.

"Traitors in my palace. Lie down" the man shouted.

They all started lying down. Many others came inside. Some ran to stand behind the man while others were pointing their guns at people already lying down.

"You are just panicking for no reason, just one traitor is left and he is not armed" Guardian said with his calm voice.

"Who?" the man asked.

"That's where we have to make a deal."

"I am your father demanding you to point out the traitor. I am not asking you" the man shouted pointing the gun at Guardian, she started screaming.

"Like you are going to shoot your only heir. Is not that you can have another son..."

"Ola" his mum screamed his name.



"Answer me now" the man shouted.

"No father. I have an offer. Take it or allow more traitors in your palace. I can help you with that but you must make the deal" Guardian replied, he was still not afraid.

The man looked at Guardian for some time and brought the gun down. He sat down on his big chair and placed his legs on the stool.

"I knew it, I knew you were weirder than I thought. Lady you have some explanations to give" the man said looking at the lady.

"Leave my mum out of this" Guardian shouted, there was anger in his voice. It felt like a big breeze pushed her but an angry one. The man must have felt the angry breeze because he looked shocked.

"Ola please don't" the woman begged Guardian.

"Yes, I can read people's body language like they are talking to me, I can make you feel whatever I want to, and worse when I am angry. You don't need any further explanation from my mum. This is between the two of us. I'm in, I won't resist you again but I'm doing it my own way."

"Ola please don't, please" Guardian's mum cried.

The man turned to look at her.

"Don't father, whatever you want to say to her don't" Guardian said but it sounded like he was warning the man.

The man turned to look at Ola and started laughing.



"So this is what you and your mum have been keeping away from me. I knew it, I knew my son is a demon" she said laughing loud.

"My son is not a demon" Guardian's mum shouted at the man. She looked like she was going to fight him. The man wanted to say something to her but stopped. He turned and look at Guardian.

He took a cigarette from another stool close to him. One of the men lighted it for him. He blew out smoke after putting it in his mouth for some seconds. Some men always smoked around their compound.

"So what deal?" the man asked.

"I will point out the last person, then I will start monitoring all your workers. I will be pointing out those cheating, those working with your rivals and any danger to you."

"And what is it for you?" the man asked shaking away the ashes of his cigarette on a plate on the stool.

"Don't ever hit my mum again, leave the bicycle repairer alone and she is going to be staying with me and my mum in our quarter."

The man did not answer Guardian. He put the cigarette in his mouth and later brought it out. He blew smoke around him.

"Then if you disobey me?" the man asked.

"As long as you keep to my offer we are okay. And don't forget you won't be holding me hostage because I need to move around to fish out your enemies" Guardian said.

"Why now? Why the deal?" the man asked.

Guardian gently pulled her to his front, then placed his hands on his shoulders.

"Because I have decided to start protecting the two most important people in my life. She and my mum. I will do anything to protect them. I am serious father, I won't allow them get hurt again" Guardian said.

The man dropped the cigarette on the plate and one of the men around him took it and put it in his mouth.

"As long as you keep to your promise we have a deal. I don't break my promise and you know it. Now where is the traitor?" the man asked rubbing his small gun.

Guardian looked at him for some seconds then nodded. He squatted to her height.

"Lara, go meet my mum. You are safe now okay?"

His mum was already coming to her, she pulled her to him and took her to her seat. She was still crying. Guardian climbed the steps that would lead to the big chair, he took a glass of red drink from a stool and climbed down. He walked to a man lying not too far from the right hand side of his father.

The man was shaking badly as Guardian tapped his back. One of the scary men raised him up, then forced him to kneel.

"Drink" Guardian said.

"Please, Lord it was the devil's work" the man pleaded.



The scary man holding him tried to press his cheek but Guardian stopped him. Guardian took the drink close to the man's hand and looked at him.

"Drink" Guardian said.

The man stopped crying and took the drink as his hand shook, he put the drink in his mouth and finished everything. The cup fell from his hand and broke. Guardian started walking close to her.

"You can tell them to stand up" Guardian said to his father.

"You can stand up" Guardian's father commanded.

Everybody on the ground started standing up. Suddenly, the man who took the drink started shaking, there was white foam coming out of his mouth. She screamed and Guardian's mum covered her eyes.....

She woke up confused for some seconds. It was another weird dream about Lara. It was so real and terrifying. She just could not understand why she was having such frequent nightmares. There was now a name to the guardian.

"Ola" she whispered.

She knew Lara was becoming part of her dream because of the trauma of losing her. Now she could not separate which was her memory of the guardian because the little girl was her dead daughter. She knew dreams and nightmares were normal, but hers felt so real like she should remember something. But Lara appearing inside her dream cancelled it from being a memory except from the guardian Lara said she always called while sleeping. That should be the only real thing about the nightmare, but she still felt



she was missing something. She turned and jerked up.

It had never happened. She had slept on Cloud's bed or rather Cloud had allowed her sleep on his bed after raping her. She shook herself from remembering Cloud's invasion. She tried standing up and felt pain. She turned to locate the clock and jerked up again. It was past twelve in the afternoon. Cloud always shoot her a dope before sending her away after having his ways with her. Most times, he made his security men to escort her. He never allowed her stay on his bed. She remembered he had given her a cocaine shot after brutalizing her body to his satisfaction but somehow, she wished she could get another shot, it might help with her headache and might prevent her from having another nightmare. She pushed the blanket away from her but pulled it back when she discovered she was still naked. She turned to locate her clothes with her eyes but felt sad. Cloud had sliced them with his knife. He had accused her of inflaming him with arousal and he had no patience to let her strip. He just didn't sleep with girls in any of his motel rooms, if not, he would have dragged her to one of the rooms and wouldn't have allowed her to wear her gown. It had never happened.

She had always stripped for him or hurriedly pull off her clothes. As she sat down debating on what to do, the door opened. Cloud was dressed and ready to go out. She got ready to explain why she was still on his bed.

"I did not know...I"

She could not think of any explanation.

"You have nothing to explain Joan. My boys just moved your things. Your box of clothes are already in the wardrobe.



"What do you mean?" she asked.

"You are moving in with me."

"What!" she exclaimed hoping he was joking.

"I don't owe you any fucking explanation why I'm moving your things here. I should have done it long ago."

"You can't do that? I still need my own priv..."

He was on her, his hands holding her throat, almost choking her.

"I said I owe you no fucking explanation, you are my property and possession, you are mine to do as I please. And if for a sec you think there is gonna be anything thing between the two of you then better change your fucking mind."

And then she remembered him, the guy from the club.

"Oh yeah, you got me" he said covering her mouth with his.

She forced herself to remain still. He pulled away and pushed her to the bed.

"I got some businesses to attend to, I will be back to give you your shoot and take you to the club myself."

"No Cloud please, I swear, I don't know him. I have no plans to mess up, I won't dare."

"I know. I trust you, it's him I don't trust" he said walking out of the room.

She threw herself on the bed and started crying. Her reality just became worse than her nightmares.



WILD:No room for the weak

CHAPTER FOUR

{It is important to know your fears}

It was past ten in the night, the club would be filled up and Bella should have stripped to her underwear and Cloud must be waiting for him but he was yet to arrange his cards. He was not expecting the pick two Cloud gave him. Cloud was not going to let Bella go and his reasons were strong. He wished he could rescue Bella like her daughter but there were rules guiding the Special Force. It was not a personal mission but a mission the president was interested in. As far as the mission was concerned, Bella was also a suspect until proven without a doubt that she was not working for Cloud and that would be after evidences of Cloud's involvement in drugs, human trafficking and most importantly, murders. This was because, only murder would warrant an Omega operation and not just murder but murders with clear evidences and witnesses where there are no visual prove. Until then, Bella could not be pulled out of the territory except he broke the rule. Her daughter's rescue operation was possible because she was a minor and no prove was needed to rescue a minor living under someone like Cloud. He was sure Bella was being held against her will because Ade, Lara's father stole from Cloud and he was also sure Bella was into drugs which was a crime on its own. But he



needed to bring out proves that she was being forced. His mind reading gift was only proof to him which did not count. Ghost had done a good job in Cloud's club and house but they had underestimated the skills of his technical unit because it only lasted for two days before the cameras and audios were figured out. He had some intelligent computer gurus with him, although not near as good as Mark but they could be compared to Hacker, Wolf's cousin who was really good. He had moved to Abuja after getting cleared by the Special Force to work in their technology company powered by Jason's company, with some sponsors from some rich northerners. He moved into Abuja with Esther his wife who he wedded a year ago. And Cloud had two that were as good as Hacker.

He would send one of the flight birds soon, but he first needed to arrange his cards. Cloud was not the average stupid drug lords who acted with strength and scary tactics but no wit. The dude was intelligent. He had never used a line registered with his name, neither did he carry out businesses with phones but with the slave message method and when he used a phone, he made sure it was not an android phone. The only card he had against Cloud at the moment was his gift. His mum had been the one to make him believe it was a gift. His mum told him he was a warrior like David's mighty men. She used to read their exploits to him, according to her, there was no way a normal human could just tear a lion or kill hundreds of people without a special gift. His mum had also introduced him to some mysteries in the bible. She said he would understand his gift the day he understood the book of Daniel and even after more than twenty three years later, he was still trying to understand that book.



She was just so young, his father did not care that she was just fifteen yet he had taken her as a trophy after murdering her brother who stole from him. His dad killed her brother, raped her in front of her dad and when her dad who could not bear the sight anymore tried to fight him, his man had silenced him with a bullet. His father realizing that there was no mother and she was the only one, took her to his self-acclaimed palace and forced her to marry him. Somehow, she had escaped and had ran to the police to report his dad but the police on duty had returned her to his father. His father had raped her every day and she only stopped resisting when she got pregnant and gave birth to him at the age of sixteen. His nanny had told him everything when he was just six, he did not understand much about rape but he understood the old nanny wanted to make him understand how young his mother was and how much his mother loved him. The nanny had said his mum was one in a million because she was supposed to hate him but she did not, instead she had given up on escaping because of him.

He had cried to his mum that day and begged her to run that he would be okay but she refused, she said she was going to make sure he did not become his father. Then he could know and understand what people felt or want before they spoke out. His mum had been the first to notice it because he did something she wanted her to do before she said it and whenever she had asked how he knew, he told her she told him and that was what he believed. But it was not that pronounced and his mum had made him promise to keep his gift away from his father and everybody. He was just to act like he was normal, she was afraid his father would turn him to his weapon. His dad was already training him to take over from him. He forced him to learn how to shoot with a gun and whipped him whenever he failed to meet up with his trainings or whenever he

refused to execute a traitor. He just could not bring himself to shoot someone because most of the people his father executed were actually innocent. His father would also beat his mum whenever he failed because he believed she was influencing him and making him weak, he also hit her for so many reasons.

One day, when he was eleven before he met Lara, he had tried to calm his mum when she came back to their quarter shaking from pain. He could feel the pains but he had pulled out almost immediately when he heard her body language. He was just eleven but he saw what his dad did to her, he had beaten her and whipped her, then raped her, although he did not know the right word was rape then. That was the day he stopped fighting his gift, he let it all out, he wanted to take the pain away but could not, he could only send waves of calm to her, she noticed it and warned him to stop but he had told her he saw everything his dad did to her. She looked so tender and so young to him, like someone who needed to be taken care of and loved, he cried for long because he could not take her pain away, he even pleaded with her to escape, he could help her escape. She was just twenty six then but she refused, except he came with her. He had said yes to her suggestion but the fear in her eyes almost knocked him down. She told him they would not be able to escape because his dad would not be able to have another child, that the doctors confirmed it. His dad would shake the whole of Lagos to find him and blood would flow, he might let her go because he had many girls and mistresses but he would never let his heir go. That had made him wonder why his father treated him badly. Against his mother's warning, he had tapped a little into his father's mind and he knew his father was not normal, his father felt that was the only way to groom him and beating him in the presence of his mum was also the only way to keep

her, he thought he loved his mum. His father was sick and he had regretted what he did because he felt sick. He started thinking of a way to take care of his mum but then things change when he had walked past that store and saw Bella. It was as if his full gift was connected to Bella.

After his mum had convinced him that he was no demon, he had tried to also absolve his mum's pains but still failed, it confirmed that it was just Bella. He could send waves of relief, calm and so many other emotions to others but for Bella he could absolve her pain and speak to her mind.

Then he heard it from one of the guards about his father's plans to kill the bicycle repairer and his daughter. He just knew there was no keeping his gift to himself, he was going to take over from his mum and he was going to start playing a game with his dad and he was planning to always win.....

He had been distracted for the second time in just two days.

'Way to go Wild' he thought as he came out of his rented apartment. It was almost 11pm. He checked the black box to confirm the bundles of cocaine and heroin, then also syringes with needles.

"To catch a komodo dragon, give him a goat" he said as he ignited his jeep but stopped. Someone was watching him, Cloud was fast, he had already placed someone on his tail and the person was so good that an ordinary soldier wouldn't have known. He wondered what else Cloud had on his sleeve.

The club was jam-packed as expected and Bella was tweaking with just a red



panties and a red bra. He was somehow grateful Cloud did not make her go naked. It might be because they were not allowed to strip naked but he knew it was all Cloud when he saw two other stripers dancing without their bras. The boys were more interested in Bella. The physical effect of addiction was surprisingly not showing in her face or body. He went straight to the counter and ordered for a non-alcoholic drink, then sat down on a stool. He was sitting between two almost naked girls. One had a boy by her side who was trying to flirt with her, she was already excited thinking an handsome dude was showing interest in her, if only she knew the boy was looking for a one night stand.

"Hi" the other girl on his right said. She made her voice loud because of the music. She was on a black handless top which could barely touch her lap, he was not interested and he did not want to waste her time but he was not allowed to send her off because Cloud was already on him. The girl turned her attention to Cloud, she adjusted her gown and pulled it down like it was a mistake. He did not need to read her to know she was showing Cloud her big breast. It was a bad night for her because Cloud was not interested. He told her to excuse them after giving her an acknowledgement, a sign the girl misinterpreted as interest. She left believing she had a shot at Cloud. Cloud replaced the girl, his two security men with him.

"Thought you won't show up" Cloud said trying to study him with his wit and what experiences he had from corrupt soldiers.

"Right now I'm more concerned about the man on my tail, I don't like being followed without reasons."



Cloud was taken aback.

"I give it to him, he is good but you also need to give Nigerian soldiers some respect, we are not all that terrible, the military have improved."

"It does not matter if you like it or not, I don't trust you and I will never trust you, my territory my rule."

He nodded.

"So what offer do you have?"

But before he could answer, he felt her.

He had intentionally left her to be, because he was all business but his mind told him he was lying. He had let her be because he did not want to glimpse even a second of what transpired between the two. But somehow she had seen him and she was angry, the anger was even directed at him. Something must have happened and he knew he could not avoid the inevitable, he opened up and followed that pull and became stiff. It was bad, very bad. Cloud had moved her to his place, his last words was ringing in her head, the cause of her anger. Cloud had told her he did not trust him, in order words, he had moved her to his place because of him. Cloud just exceeded his estimation of him. In all his years in military, he just met a drug lord that was as crafty and witty as his father.

"Wild" Cloud warned.

He did not know he had turned to look at her. He was just going off his own script with reckless abandon, he was now beginning to understand Jason, Beast and Ghost. This



was how it felt like to lose concentration because of a woman, a woman he loved. He turned to face Cloud still struggling to compose himself and thinking of a way to arrange his cards because Cloud had given him another pick two.

"What is the warning for, I paid to enter to watch a stripper."

He was glad he recovered his composure quicker than he had expected.

"Fuck off, I told you she is off limit."

"I'm not supposed to watch her anymore? You said I can watch I did not remember you changing the rule."

Cloud did not reply immediately, he studied him.

"I'm glad you still remember the rule. What deal did you come with?"

Cloud was all back to business but he was not, he was still trying to hold himself back from ripping Cloud to shreds. In just the few seconds he connected with her, he saw something that reminded him of his mum. It was bad anytime he remembered his mum that way. Growing up to find out what he saw was called rape had hurt him so much that he had felt like waking the three drug lords and torturing them to death again. They took away his chance to tear his dad to pieces. They also knew his mum was his father's hostage yet they had murdered her, they prevented him from ending his dad and giving his mum the life she deserved. He was already planning on taking over the business after eliminating his dad but they had invaded the palace and taken his right from him. He sighed after breathing in. He was going to make Cloud beg for death.

"You want me to bring the sample here?" he asked after putting all his years of training



to his voice, he owed Major a lot of debt he would never be able to pay.

"My man will follow you and bring you to my meeting room" Cloud said standing up.

"Don't forget rule number one" Cloud warned him before walking towards the restricted door leaving Laser guy with him.

Laser guy nodded towards the entrance door. He stood and followed him. He connected back to Bella.

"I'm sorry Bella, I'm sorry I took too long."

He did not pull out, he allowed her to confirm her sanity, even if she became destabilized, Cloud was not there to watch.

"Are you for real or am I crazy?" she thought but he heard her.

"Yeah, if you can hear me, then you are definitely crazy but not the normal crazy" he felt her miss her step. She started staggering and some of the technicians were there to catch her before she fell, they were pulling her away when he walked out of the club. At least he was sure of one thing, Cloud would not rape her, she was safe for the night not because Cloud did not plan to rape her but because she would still be dizzy for some time and Cloud still wanted her alive.

In fact he just found a way to play two of the cards Cloud gave him.

{Facing your fears does not necessarily mean you should confront it, sometimes you just have to become part of it- Wild}



CHAPTER FIVE

{It is important to let your enemies believe what they think of you.}

Cloud had kept to his promise of taking her to the club himself after making her beg for another shot. He did not even give her the shot but made her to insufflate a spoon of crack cocaine with his special spoon. He taught her how to do it with her long fingernails that was after she had willingly given her body to him and begged for it. Somehow, she loved the new method. The effect was not instantaneous like shooting a cocaine but she loved the bitter taste from insufflating the white substance, then the pleasure and feeling of ecstasy that came with it. She did not care when Cloud flipped her once again to the bed and satisfied himself with her, she just felt awesome, her fears and nightmares disappeared, she forgot her current predicament but it did not last long, the effect disappeared too quickly and she saw herself back to reality, just when Cloud was telling her to clean up because she must not be late.

She wished she could go back to that feeling, she begged him to use her body again as long as she got another spoon, but he had refused, he said he was saving his strength for after and even promised to give her more than he normally did. Just that promised had given her hope, that no matter what happened, she would have some minutes of escape from reality. She could not wait to get high again, to travel far away from her nightmare.



Cloud had driven her to the club and before letting her go to the dressing room, he pulled her to him.

"I own you Joan, you are all mine, don't forget that, you know what I will do when you mess up?"

She nodded, she was not planning to, her mind was totally occupied with his promise of getting her high with cocaine.

"Good" he said slapping her buttocks and kissing her. She forced herself to kiss back and was relieved when he left.

Only when she had donned herself with her short skimpy gown did she remember Lara again. She started crying after failing to hold back the tears. She had to redo her makeup and was three minutes late. She was grateful Cloud was not yet in the Club, she guessed he was attending to business. She felt a slight pain from being overused as she climb the stage for her work. Two girls were already entertaining the clubbers, one had already stripped to her pant and bra. She gave the technician a signal and felt a bit powerful as she watched the men watching her strip slowly as she danced to the music.

She knew when Cloud entered the club because he attracted a lot of girls who wanted a taste of his money, even some of the rich guys went to greet him and his entourage. She took a glimpse at him, he was not ugly, not that handsome but he was definitely good looking. She could not understand that part of her that did not want to accept his life and become part of him. She should be happy he was possessing her, she should be happy she was his favorite from all the girls he slept with but she was not happy, not only did her mind resist him, her body rejected him, not that she had felt any



better with Ade. Cloud glanced at her before turning to shake the hand of Lekie, a son of a senator. His escorts and drugs were supplied by Cloud and he paid heavily for it. He was with two girls who were partially naked with net as their top, no bra and their short skirts where not touching their laps. A new music started, a sign to strip to just her bra and panties.

She noticed Cloud and his guests were already seated and they were all glued to her. She made sure she was facing Cloud as she slowly sliced her gown open with a knife she brought out from the side of the gown. Cloud was saying something to his guests, she knew he was telling them she was off limit and she also knew they did not hear him because one of them was rubbing his groin and licking his lips while the girls glared at her. She turned and tweaked to the music amidst cheers from the crowd. She let the music overwhelm her while imagining the pleasure Cloud had promised her, the pleasure that would take her away from reality.

For a long time, she lost herself to the music and did not look Cloud's way. When she decided to see if Cloud was still watching, she saw him, the guy from the other night, the guy she had hallucinated his voice. He was talking with Cloud and she just knew it was about business. It was because of him Cloud moved her to his place. Although she did not understand why Cloud felt threatened by him and why Cloud still wanted him, she was angry. She was angry he looked so relaxed while she was living out a nightmare.

Suddenly she felt something inside her, warmth, a presence, it felt different from the other day, it was like being heated up by a warm body on a cold morning only the feeling was ten times stronger and intimate. She quickly turned when she saw him turning to

look at her, there was no way she was going to let him ruin her getting high after her show. She was going to deal with the insanity that came with him being around, because what she was feeling was not normal. In fact if she should tell someone that she was feeling another person's presence in her body, she would be declared crazy and would be asked to either go to a prophet for deliverance or visit a psychiatric hospital as soon as possible before it became late.

She felt more confused when the invasion stopped, it was scaring the shit out of her because there was just two meaning to it, either the man talking with Cloud was not human and could invade someone's mind or she was really crazy. She forced herself to concentrate on entertaining the crowd but not up to five minutes later she, felt him again but it was more intense.

"I'm sorry Bella, I'm sorry I took too long" she heard his voice ringing in her mind.

It was now beyond careful, she spun towards their sitting position as she danced but they were no longer there, she sighted him walking towards the exit door and decided to answer him. She needed to confirm if she was sane.

"Are you for real or am I crazy?" She did not say it out loud but he replied, he fucking replied her. She felt dizzy and it looked like the world was spinning with speed. She saw herself falling.

She opened her eyes and saw she was lying on a bed, she did not need anybody to tell her she was in one of the motel rooms. A drip was flowing into her body from her right hand. She wanted to ask what happened but closed her eyes immediately she heard Saro's voice. He was Cloud's cousin and also a doctor. His private hospital was almost



owned by Cloud.

"Gogo you keep asking when she will wake up when you have not fully explained what happened, I'm no magician" Saro said.

Saro's mum was Cloud's father's younger sister. Saro's father was from Ogoni. Cloud was Ijaw by tribe and his full name was Adagogo but only his very close friends and family members called him Gogo. He had told her he got Cloud as his nickname when he was in secondary school. His gang of friends told him that he was like a cloud which could not be accurately predicted. The name had stuck and people forgot his real name. They still met regularly and she was always made to go with him whether he was hosting or not.

"I don't know, I have explained what I was told Saro" Cloud said.

"So she just started staggering on stage and fainted? People don't just faint Gogo. I have to tell you the truth, she is looking a bit stressed. That is the only diagnosis I can give. It's not up to a month she lost her daughter and moving her to your place could have added to the stress" Saro said.

"Saro she was looking okay few hours ago, I took her to the club myself after making sure she ate and I even gave her vitamins" Cloud said.

"Gogo can they excuse us, I need to ask you something private" Saro said.

There was a pause, she heard the sounds of retreating footsteps and the sound of the door being shot.

"Spill" Cloud said.



"How often are you having sex with her?"

"What the fuck do you mean by that question?" Cloud shouted.

"Gogo she also look drained, like she is not having enough rest before climbing on stage. I understand she gives you what other girls cannot but you need to slow down except you want her dead. Good you listened to me about shooting her cocaine but when you add up cocaine, her recent loss, you mounting on her every fucking time and the hours she is dancing on stage, then her fainting is nothing unusual. I don't think there is something wrong. s

She just need some rest, except you want her dead, men it's your fucking call, she is your property" Saro said.

Even Saro was also into drugs, he had a private area in the hospital where rich drug addicts visited to either inhale, shoot or insufflate cocaine, heroin, marijuana or inject fentanyl and many others.

"Just make sure she is okay, I will think of a way to fix it but she is not going out of my sight" Cloud said destroying and shattering her hope.

"What is with the dude you told me about? I just don't get why you feel threatened by someone you can just quickly dispose of" Saro said.

"The reason you don't get it is same reason I'm the most feared in this area. Wit men, you need fucking damn wit. The dude is a soldier. Although my team are still working to confirm him, from his words, he was sent here after those fucking bastards escaped. He said shit about Special Force and that is the only fucking thing I have confirmed."



"What is Special Force?" Saro asked.

"I got a message from one of my guys, there are Special Force soldiers in the army, I wouldn't have believed what he wrote in the letter if he is not a high ranked officer. The shit about Special Force is real" Cloud said.

"You've not yet explained who they are."

"He wrote that they are like some teams like units in Nigerian armed force like they pick best from navy, air force, military and put them in units according to the stuff they are made of so they cannot be called soldier, so they are Special Force because of the combination. He asked for some fucking dope if I want to know about the main thing."

"I don't understand."

"This dude claimed he is from the best team or unit of Special Force, that those bastards were Special Force and the president got my message, so the president asked the best team to take over and he blackmailed top officials to be chosen. I want to find out about that unit, I need to trace who I am dealing to his home."

"But I don't understand. Why will an undercover soldier tell you he is on undercover?"

"That was same question I asked. He did not blackmail his commandant to come here because he wanted to do the shit they sent him, he is another hungry soldier who wants to enjoy both ways. He came with a win win offer. He has pure crack cocaine they seized from drug dealers and hid, he came here to make money, then report back that the shit going on around here is not me. We will find a scapegoat and he would leave. So you get it now. I don't completely believe him but the first message I sent out has



come out positive. I can't just waste him without confirming he is legit."

"That is a lot of shit Gogo, I guess you are right, that is the reason you are most feared. So you've seen the drugs? At least that can verify him a little."

"Yeah, I saw the syringe yesterday, it looked pure. I was supposed to see a little of what he has few minutes ago before this shit happened. But Olisa just confirmed he saw the box and the shit is real, cocaine, marijuana and heroin with tooters all there. I told Olisa to tell him our meeting is postponed till tomorrow night, that's this night so I can deal with this current shit. My technicians are still trying to track him but I need to be very careful, this is like a bomb that can be ignited with just the slightest mistake."

"But that's like something good Gogo, you get to have the feds off your territory, you get clean drugs at a cheaper rate, he gets money, you part ways. So what's the issue? This is good."

"He does not want money."

"I thought you said he is one hungry solider."

"I know what I said, maybe he is not that hungry but wants more because that Prado jeep is new and a soldier cannot afford that shit. He even said it, he has been in this shitty business for some time. He actually came to make money but changed his mind, and he is asking for what will never happen."

"I don't like the way this shit is going Gogo."

"It's exactly what you think. Turns out he has erection issue and she resurrected his dead member. Even before he told me, I had seen the way he looked at her, it was



different, like he was looking at something he did not believe he would ever see, like shit, how do I explain it."

"Like he wants to pull her down and find out what the feeling it's like, like he was trying to understand the feeling she was resurrecting" Saro said.

"Exactly, and you know I have been through that shit men, I know that feeling and I know what one can do because of it. Life is about money, drug and women you know. I saw the determination in his eyes. He even offered to add money to the drugs, plus the report in exchange for her, but I can't. It's like giving me what I have in excess in exchange for her and you know I won't be able to roll with other chicks without getting my flame from her."

"So what are you gonna do because this is a big shit, I don't think he will change his mind, if I'm him, I won't, I will do everything to get her, and this can go bad if his claim is true."

"If his claim is not legit, I will waste him immediately and prepare for others that will be sent."

"What if it's completely true?"

"That's where I need my wit cause I am not negotiating Joan with him. I've told my techs to hurry up and I have delivered the dope to the officer. I will know what to do later but I won't mind risking everything if he crosses the line."

"Calm down Cloud, you are losing it. You need to tread cautiously and use that smart brain we know you for."



"That's why she is staying with me, I don't want her out of my sight until everything is over."

"I get you man, I understand you now, just hurry with the shit. I know you can handle it."

She decided she had heard enough and opened her eyes.

"Where am I" she stammered.

Less than a second later, Cloud and Saro were by the bed.

"Joan how are you feeling?" Saro asked.

She had almost forgotten about that, the real reason she fainted. She closed her eyes to observe her mind, he was not there. But it was true, she was definitely not insane but something unusual was happening. The man who walked into the club, who she now knew as a corrupt soldier could somehow speak to her mind and the most scary part was she could talk back and it was not just that because there was also a feeling that she was terribly missing something important.

CHAPTER SIX

{In wild's dictionary, the word 'weak' means death.}

She had been afraid of entering what she thought as a dark hole but her mind had



Edit with WPS Office

changed the moment George had driven inside. That was two days ago. They were currently at the underground house. It was very large with a very big play parlor and other smaller rooms. Pearl had taken her to her personal play room and she had screamed from excitement. There were lots of canvas, colors, paintbrushes and many drawing and painting tools. Pearl said Dad was the one who told them to put them in her room.

She also took her to what she called a studio, it was just wow. It was as if she was outside a blue sky with rivers and waterfalls. Everywhere was glassy. She saw some paintings others had painted. But she was not in her room or the studio. She was with her drawing book in their big glassy parlor. There was no wall but big paintings of dinosaurs running in a big forest with other animals. Pearl said it was a 3D design which made the animals move up and down. Up used to change all the time like the sky, sometimes the day was bright, sometimes it was dark with stars and moon. One side of the wall was 3D painting of the sea with both big and small fishes. One side was almost same thing as the waterfall in her room at Abuja, the last wall was the big TV, very tall and wide. There were couches that were almost looking like beds, then tables with computers and laptops. There were also round chairs that spun and turned with someone sitting on it. The tile was green like they were standing on a field, and so many other things.

One of their birds which George told her was not real and was made by Uncle Jason to be following them was flying around the room, sometimes it would perch somewhere and stare at them with its sharp eyes. The place was beautiful, even more than her dream.

Dad had not called since he left and she was missing him badly. She loved Dad so much, she wished he had done film trick on her long ago but he said he had been searching for Mum and he could not find her because she was not in any computer they used to search for someone and she was not answering her real name. He also told her what separated him and Mum, then helped her not be to be dreaming about what Uncle Cloud used to do to her and Mum. She also wished Mum was around, she was not happy Mum was still with Cloud. She looked at her big pink wristwatch Aunty Cindy had worn her, she said Dad would call her through the watch. George taught her how to use it. She loved her uncles, her aunties but it was her siblings she loved most, although John was just troublesome, but she still loved him. She wished Mum could see how happy she was and what love was all about. George told her Uncle Jason and Geoffrey could talk but they did not want to because it disturbed their body, but it was somehow okay because George and Geoffrey were the same. They look so much alike and they dressed same way. She had to be looking at their hand to differentiate them and George always told them what his brother wanted.

Geoffrey was sitting on one of the bedlike couch, he had a big tablet phone he was operating, Pearl was sitting on one of the tables with computers, she was pressing her phone and laughing. If the adults were around, they would say she was chatting with Jake. Beast, Wolf, Ghost and Uncle Jason were not around, they left after working on the farm while the ladies worked on the garden. They had gone to church and they were back. George said she could not add uncle to their name because that was not their real name. She could only call the ladies Aunty except for Sabrina and Stud, but Stud looked like a man. She could call Jason Uncle Jason because that was his real name but the

other soldiers in Abuja house would be their nickname and no Uncle to it.

Two were in their hospital. Dad had taken her to see them. One was sleeping and only one was awake, his name was Stone and he was so happy to see her. He had too many bandages on his chest and head but he said he was okay. She loved Fast, he had flown her around Abuja and she preferred him to Dad, Dad was too slow. Mark was teaching her how to swim when Dad brought her to Benin. Sabrina promised she would soon teach her how to fight when she was less busy but she might not need Sabrina again because Pearl was already teaching her. She had practiced with them few hours ago before church. The others were very good, even John could fight. She could not wait to continue her lessons because she wanted to know how to fight people like Cloud. She would protect Mum from danger and nobody would be able to force her like Cloud. They had eaten and then driven to their underground house. She was with Aunty Cindy and the twins, but Al was also with them including John and Pearl.

The big compound had two houses, then three outside the fence but they could go there using the tunnels, one house was for Wolf, then Ghost and another one. George said Uncle Jason built it for the others who used to visit, he said Ghost named it their open house. But all the houses and farms and other land were fenced round. The underground house was mainly for them, George said they could even lock the adults out. They also had a field combat room, it was larger than the parlor. They used it to practice what George called special combat.

John was struggling to set up a pyramid with brigs. Puppy was helping him bring the brigs from the other side of the parlor. George and Al were sitting on the tiles with

her, she was teaching them how to draw a bird, they followed every step as she drew. The TV was on and they were showing National Geographic Wild, that was what George called it. He said they showed animals and how they lived in the forest, George had told Geoffrey to reduce the volume because no one was watching.

"No no no" John screamed making all of them to turn towards him. That was the only language he could speak well.

His pyramid had fallen again and he had not even gone anywhere. George had told him he could not build it but she was not sure John understood what George said. He had shouted a big no and carried the pyramid calendar Geoffrey had used to set his own which took just few seconds. He was so fast and did not even pause to look at the calendar and he did not miss a step. John had watched him and then dragged the calendar to his favorite position which was close to the dinosaur which had its mouth open like he was about to swallow something as he ran up and down. John was not afraid of it, instead he loved that place more than any place in the parlor. He had scattered Geoffrey's pyramid and transferred it to his position with the help of Puppy. George said Puppy was a gift from Ghost to Aunty Halima but it looked like Puppy loved John more than anybody in the family. The dog looked like a wolf.

"He will not be able to build that pyramid" George said.

"John give up and play with your toys" Pearl said.

"No no no no no no no" John replied.

Everybody turned and continued with what they were doing. He would soon get tired.



"Let him do it, I don't want him to come and scatter our drawing" Al said but she was too loud because John heard her.

"Oh no, Pearl please stop John" George protested as John started walking towards them abandoning the pyramid he was building.

"Like he will listen to me. Just give him a drawing book and a pen if you want peace, I'm busy" Pearl said going back to her phone.

Before John could get to them, the TV started talking. Geoffrey had increased the volume. It made them turn to look at it because a man's voice mentioned a female anaconda.

"Wow, this one is very big" George said.

The big snake was green with many dark spots scattered around its body, it was crawling on a grass. Geoffrey reduced the volume but nobody stopped watching. They all abandoned their drawing and moved closer to the TV. Puppy started howling like a wolf.

"Puppy it's TV, it is not here" George said rubbing Puppy's back. John had also joined them. It was only Geoffrey and Pearl who remained where they were sitting.

"Where is it going to?" she asked George.

"I don't know, maybe she is searching for food."

"She?" she asked.

"Yes, Wild said this anaconda is a she."



But Aunty Pat said animals were called it, but she did not argue with George. The screen changed and showed an antelope eating grass not too far from the snake.

"Antelope" Al said.

John tried to pronounce it but it sounded like he was saying etsheho.

"Antelopes are very fast" Al said.

"Who told you?" she asked.

"We have watched them before" Al answered.

"Bad news for the antelope, that snake will swallow it" George said.

"No, he will run away, the snake won't catch it. Antelope can ran fast" Al said.

George did not answer, the snake started crawling towards the antelope who was not aware of the danger behind it.

"Antelope run" Al shouted and John tried to repeat what she said.

"The antelope cannot run Al, he does not know the snake is coming" George said.

"Then tell the camera man to tell him to run" Al said.

"Al it is past, the snake had already swallowed the antelope, we are just watching it now" George explained.

"No, he has not, can't you see the antelope is still there, the snake has not swallowed it yet, he can still run. I don't want the snake to swallow him" Al said.



She understood George but Al was still a baby, she believed the snake was outside and someone was videoing them and showing it to them using the TV, but it had already happened. She wished the snake did not swallow the antelope because the antelope did not do anything, it was just cute.

The snake was almost close to the antelope but it was still eating grass. It raised its head and the snake stopped crawling. The antelope turned sideways like it knew danger was around but he continued eating the grass when it did not see the snake.

“Geoffrey do something, I don’t want the snake to swallow the antelope, he should go and meet someone like his size, the antelope cannot fight it” Al shouted to Geoffrey.

Geoffrey did not answer, he did not even raise his head to look at Al. It was as if Al was not talking to him. The snake suddenly threw itself on the antelope and wrapped it with its long body.

“No no, do something, why is the camera man not saving the antelope, he cannot fight the snake. The snake will not go and fight a lion or elephant, he is fighting small antelope. Geoffrey do something, help the antelope” Al cried.

“Cutie, nobody can help, it’s past” George said.

“No it’s not past, the camera man can help” Al cried more as the antelope kept struggling stretching his legs and hands to get out. Puppy started barking.

“It’s against the rule of the wild Al, Wild said nobody is permitted to temper with wild nature” George explained.

“I don’t understand” she said looking at George for more explanation.



"Your dad did not tell you about the wild?" George asked.

She shook her head. The antelope had stopped struggling.

"There was a time lions came and fought another old lion in his home. They defeated him and took over. I was angry the camera man did not save the old lion because he was old and weak but your dad said it is the rule of wild life. Nobody is allowed to intervene because that's how their life is. The lion and other animals must eat, the lion must fight others to have a place and there is no place for the weak. The antelope did not have sense, he raised his head but did not run, now the snake has him and if the camera stop the snake or shoot it, they will arrest him because the snake is just looking for food. Wild is tough for anyone. Do you understand?" George asked.

She nodded, she understood everything.

"If they stop the snake, it will starve to death. It's like stopping the antelope from eating the grass" she answered.

"You are correct, you are so smart" Pearl said.

She had joined them. The snake removed its body from the antelope, it opened its mouth and started swallowing it from its head. Al increased her cry and George pulled her to him.

"Sorry, it's like that in the wild Al" George said tapping Al's back.

"If I catch the snake I am going to squeeze his neck and punch him" Al stammered.

John looked like he wanted to say wow, he was so interested in how the snake was



swallowing the antelope.

"AI stop crying. Geoffrey you made AI cry. Why did you play it?" George asked.

She did not know Geoffrey had joined them, he pulled AI from George.

"Cutie Geoffrey is sorry" George said as Geoffrey took AI to the chair. He changed the TV to a sea.

"No, no no no" John screamed. He wanted to continue watching the anaconda.

"Let's go back to our drawing" George said.

They went back to their drawing, John and Puppy joined them while Pearl went back to her table. George quickly gave his drawing book and pencil to John but John looked at him and shouted no. He picked another drawing book and another pencil.

"John don't draw and follow what Lara is drawing, just scatter everywhere" George said.

"No" John said shifting close to her. He started looking at her drawing but he was drawing zizzag on his drawing book not a bird.

She and George started laughing. That was how they talked to John. If they wanted him not to do something they would tell him to do it, he would say no and do the opposite.

"Not too smart" George said.

She took her pen but before she could continue with the beak of the bird, she froze, everybody froze then turned towards Geoffrey and AI. Geoffrey just said sorry.

Geoffrey was lying on the couch and AI was resting on his chest while Geoffrey patted

her back.

"Stop crying. I'm not happy when you cry" Geoffrey said.

She looked at George, same time George looked at her, even Pearl looked at them, they were all surprised. Geoffrey was talking. Pearl put her finger on her lips, she wanted them to keep shut. They nodded. She turned to the computer and started operating it.

"She is connecting to the Circle so they can see what is happening" George whispered to her.

"Will my dad join?" she whispered back.

"Maybe" George whispered and made her turn to the TV, they were all appearing on the TV which was separating into many TVs in one TV. Dad also appeared but George covered her mouth before she could scream his name. She waved at him and he blew her a kiss. She was so excited, her chest was dancing. John turned to look at the TV but Wolf disappeared before John could see him and scream. He was always with his dad. He preferred his dad to his mum. John turned back to Geoffrey, he was looking at him like he was trying to understand if he was the one who spoke.

"Nobody wanted to save the antelope, he did not do anything to the snake" Al said.

"I know, but it's like that Al. The snake has to eat like you ate this morning" Geoffrey answered.

"But there is grass" Al said.

"The snake does not eat grass. Don't worry if the snake comes near this place, I will kill

it okay?"

She nodded.

"I want to sleep" Al said and Geoffrey pulled her closer, he continued to tap her back. Al turned her head towards them, her eyes were closed, she was already sleeping.

"That is the longest I've ever seen and heard you talk Geoffrey" George broke the silence.

Geoffrey turned to them, he looked towards the TV and then to Pearl, then smiled and closed his eyes. John still looked confused but everybody else was smiling. Pearl came to join them, she was looking excited. Sabrina was not on the TV. Fast was the first to speak on TV.

"Jason this is very simple. On behalf of Beast and the hunter family, Iga wete isi ewu for a start."

She did not understand what he said.

"Wait, I heard that. You said Jason should come with the head of a goat for a start"

Pearl said.

Pearl had told her that she was learning Yoruba, Hausa, Igbo, French and German, that she would soon start her own lesson.

"You are doing fine Pearl" Fast answered.

"But why is Jason bringing goat head?" Pearl asked.

"There is no isi ewo for what will never happen" Beast said.



All of them started talking and laughing and she could not just understand them, even Pearl was confused.

"This is more than a miracle" Mark said when they had reduced their too many talks.

"So we have the formula. If you want George, sorry Geoffrey to talk, make Al watch a snake swallow an antelope which was the meat she was dragging with me just yesterday with her yam porridge" Ghost said and they started laughing.

"But Al has been crying before now, there is something we are not getting here" Major said.

"Geoffrey I hope you are not sleeping, wake up and say hi. Al is still with you. Say something to Mummy" Aunty Cindy said. She just joined them. She was now the only lady on the screen.

George opened his eyes and looked at the TV, then smiled and closed his eyes again.

"Seriously? Just like that? Mum loves you dear" Aunty Cindy said.

"At least we know there will be no competition, it has now been confirmed who is bringing the isi ewu" Dad said for the first time and all of them started laughing again.

"Dad" she shouted running to the TV.

It started from her height but her hand could touch Dad's side of the TV. George said they usually pulled it down with a remote anytime they wanted to talk with Jake. They pulled it up because of John. She placed her hand on Dad's side after greeting all of them.



"How are you sweetheart?" Dad asked.

"I'm fine daddy."

He became the only one on the screen, the others had left. John was screaming dad when the TV became one.

"No, no no no" John shouted and started crying.

The screen became two because Wolf was back.

"Hi my Pup" Wolf said.

John stopped screaming and started smiling as he waved at Wolf who he saw few hours ago.

"I hope you are not giving anyone trouble?"

"No" John shouted.

"Good, dad is coming okay?"

John nodded.

"Bye, love you Pup" Wolf said.

"Bye, love you." John repeated but it sounded like ba, yof yo.

The TV became one and John did not scream this time, he ran back to his drawing book.

"Hope you are doing well with your siblings?" Dad asked.

"Yes daddy, I love them so much, George and Pearl are teaching me a lot. I have been



waiting for you to call and tell me about Mum.”

“I wanted to call you later but Pearl connected us to what was happening. I miss you Lara.”

“I miss you dad. What of Mum?”

“Mum is missing you so much Lara. She is so sorry she did not treat you well.”

“But I know, I am not mad at her. Tell her I am not mad and I want her to come join me. Here is very safe and makes someone happy all the time.”

“But you know I can’t tell her yet Lara, it will spoil everything.”

“But I’m missing her and I don’t like her with Cloud. He is bad and treats her bad” she started crying.

“Hey, hey sweetheart, Mum will soon be out, okay. I cannot just bring her out. Where I am is like the wild, you won’t understand but...”

“I understand, is it like the snake and the antelope?”

“Something like that.”

“Don’t allow Cloud to swallow Mummy” she cried.

“Wow, Lara you are too smart for your age. I will not allow Cloud to swallow her, I will make sure she comes home, do you know why?”

She shook her head.

“Because I am Wild. I am more dangerous and bigger than the Cloud. I will make sure



Cloud does not have a place in the wild, it belongs to me, the cloud does not belong here. I will also whip him like he whipped you before sending him away from the wild and he will never return to hurt you and Mummy again okay?"

She nodded.

"I don't want to see any tears in yours eyes, can you clean it for me?"

She nodded and wiped her tears with her palm.

"That's it sweetheart. Dad will soon come back with Mum after beating Cloud in the game of the wild okay?"

She nodded.

"I love you so much."

"I love you too dad."

The TV went off. Dad said he would not allow Cloud to swallow Mum and she believed him because Dad was bigger than Cloud. She wished dad would whip Cloud very hard. Cloud was just small like the antelope when it came to Dad.

"Dad is going to swallow Cloud and bring Mum home" she said as she joined George and John on the ground.

CHAPTER SEVEN

(Sometimes you need to make your opponents believe they are winning, let your checkup be a surprise gift- Wild)

He had just finished watching the replayed video of what happened at the kids' underground house for the fifth time. Pearl had contacted them with a quick summary of what was happening but she had transferred a video of how it all started and he just could not believe how intelligent the kids were including Lara and surprisingly John. He had been so confused that Geoffrey was talking and he kept on looking at George and Geoffrey to confirm it was actually Geoffrey. And George's analysis was excellent, he still remembered what he explained about the wild three months ago and Lara knew something about comparison. The kids understood the game of the wild and Lara had easily compared it to Cloud's territory. If she knew how accurate she was. Then George had called the antelope senseless but at the moment, he had no idea where he could place himself in the wild, but the night would tell.

He was about to find out what Cloud did with his pick two and suspension, it was important to bring it local because at the moment, it was looking more like they were playing a card game. He still felt being followed as he drove to the Club.

It was Sunday and he was sure half of those already dancing and half-drunk attended Sunday's service. The stripers were already down to their undies but Bella was not among them, the pick two worked but not the suspension because Bella was in the club with Cloud. She was putting on a see through short gown, her red bras and panties could be seen by anyone looking and many were looking. Cloud had his hand

possessively on her shoulders as he discussed with his VIPs while sipping their wine. He nodded at Cloud and went to order his drinks from the counter. There was just three people sitting on the stools and they looked like they came together. He needed to find out what cards Cloud had with him before Cloud would join him. He would connect to Bella later.

He sipped his drink and read Cloud's body language, he was waiting for Major Tayo to reply his message about the best team of the Special Force before he decided what to fully do with him. He closed his mind to Cloud, he had gotten all he needed. Cloud was going the direction he wanted and in addition, he had the name of his high ranked informant. Major Tayo would definitely be able to confirm how dangerous they were, he might be able to confirm that one of them was working as an undercover agent in Port Harcourt but that would be all. He might have the name of his unit but not their personal names and life. Not even the Chief of Staff knew them to their house. Cloud would want to grab the opportunity that had been presented to him. Cloud would not trust him but he would also not want to lose the opportunity which he had been made to believe by himself. Then his real undercover would begin. Cloud did not stand up, instead, it was Laser guy whose name was Olisa who was coming to meet him.

"Boss wants me to escort you to the meeting room" Laser guy said.

Olisa believed he did well by making his voice deep. He nodded to Olisa and followed him outside. He took out the box from his Jeep and followed Olisa through another entrance to a large room. Olisa told him to sit down and wait for Cloud. He nodded and started studying the room.

"Don't bother studying anything, there is nothing in here to blackmail Boss with" Olisa said.

He turned his attention to Olisa. It was one thing to act as an undercover agent who was not too strong and who must act like Cloud was above him but it was another to be looked down at by Cloud's subject. He was not ready for a child's play. He did not say anything to him, he just looked at him. Olisa tried to look tough but turned his eyes away, he felt the fear he sent to him. He felt Olisa battling with his mind that his body was just reacting because the man before him was huge. Whatever he used to excuse his fears was not his concern, at least he would not talk to him.

He knew Cloud was still in the game the moment he walked in with two escorts and Bella. At first, it did not make sense but he understood Cloud's game plan few seconds later. He was bringing Bella for him to know she was out of negotiation. He kissed her before making her sit on his lap with his erection clearly visible. Cloud's action was affecting him not because he was with the girl he loved but because Bella was struggling to flow with him, he could sense her discomfort, he just did not understand why some believed fear was necessary to force loyalty. They all had a twisted mindset that showing love was weakness and it would bring rebellion. His father would have had little resistance if he had at least treasured his mother and not threaten her. Cloud's case was even less complicated than his father's case because his mum was a Christian to the core, she wouldn't have accepted his father's source of livelihood because of her belief but Bella was different, she was not morally driven neither into religion. All Cloud needed was to make her his treasure not his possession, he could have even won Bella over by making Lara his best friend. He just could not understand

how someone would abuse a child, they were the purest of creature. He knew they had a twisted mindset but it happened by choice. Cloud did not know the real card in the game of loyalty and it was somehow to his advantage. Bella tried her best not to look his way, she was still pissed off but more worried about the real reason she had fainted.

"Shoot, what do you have to offer?" Cloud asked rubbing Bella's breast, she reacted like she was getting pleasure from it but her body felt repulsive.

He wanted to pretend that what Cloud was doing was not affecting him but he did not, Cloud must believe he was all interested in her. They were after all playing a game and he had just made up his mind to follow Cloud's script. If Bella became the focus, then he would not try to find out if he was being monitored for other things.

"Wild, I'm waiting" Cloud said but there was no warning in his voice. He did not need to because he wanted him to see what he would never have.

He gave one last stare at Bella who was moving her body like she was enjoying Cloud's hand on her breasts, she moaned when he pinched her nipple. It was disturbing on a higher level because the beast in him, the wildness in him wanted to tear Cloud apart right there. Cloud was baiting him and he was taking the bait. He felt the arousal of the other three men as he opened the box. He raised his head and noticed Cloud was no longer baiting him because he was already into it, he was already animalistic with Bella.

"I don't watch porn" he said bringing out a bundle of crack cocaine.

His words brought back little of Cloud's sanity, he just could not wait to finish the deal and rape Bella in one of the rooms.



Cloud signaled to Olisa who picked the bundle and gave it to Cloud. Bella stared at the bundle like she wanted to grab it from Cloud's hand. Cloud had done a lot of work on her, he had intentionally made her a prisoner to drug, a plan ahead of when she must have worked out the money her ex stole from him. He also gave Olisa a bundle of heroin and marijuana, then some syringe of cocaine for shooting. It was almost exactly as he told Cloud except the hard drugs were authorized for his undercover mission. His main target was not Cloud as a drug dealer but a trafficker. Cloud opened each of the bundles, sniffed and rubbed the texture in his hands.

"How many of these do you have?"

His voice was husky and in a rush. He might ask them to excuse him and Bella if his endurance ran out. He got a flash of Cloud's mind, he was thinking of what would happen if Bella was taken from him and he reacted by groaning like an angry animal. Bella and the others turned to look at Cloud, they were confused on what was making him angry.

"More than ten boxes of these and you know just this box is running more than twelve million. These are pure" he answered.

"I know that, can't argue with what I'm seeing, but you're not gonna sell it that much? And also the other fed deal is not yet sorted out. But for now I wanna start with this dopes" Cloud said.

"As long as we agree on what I want. I have not changed my mind, we could start for just a night for this box."



Cloud was on him almost immediately, he had pulled Bella with him. He brought out his pistol and pointed it on his head, Bella screamed as he cocked the gun.

"I told you she is non-negotiable. Don't let me kill you too early" Cloud warned but he was more worried about Bella's fear for him and then her shock from what Cloud said. But it seemed like she knew what the deal was about, she was shocked because she just confirmed it.

"Blow my head and have the feds in your territory in less than five hours" he answered.

Cloud pushed the gun further to his head and Bella shook from fear.

"You allow me deal with that" Cloud said.

"Boss" Olisa called.

Cloud turned to look at him and nodded. Pearl could disarm him within that seconds he was distracted. He did not shift his body away, he used that distraction to connect with Bella. He felt her panic but still continued with the connection.

"Your fear for me is touching Bella."

"Get out of my head and stop calling me Bella."

He prevented her from feeling dizzy by sending waves of strength to her. He would send something else at the right time.

"I can't because I feel your discomfort, I'm not happy you are trying to force your body to accept his invasion. Don't waste your time because it will never happen."



"Who are you? How is this possible?"

"The answer to your first question is within you, the answer to your second question is still a mystery."

"You have not said anything. Stop whatever you are doing, stop invading my mind."

He pulled out immediately Cloud saw her staring at him. Cloud felt extremely jealous and pissed off with Bella. She pushed her body to him to distract him but he heard Cloud loud and clear. He was going to punish her and even Bella knew it, it was not the first time. She was trying her best to prepare her body to what Cloud was going to do to her. She felt she had survived worse. Nobody would know Cloud used to hit her because there was no physical injury, Cloud just knew how to do it perfectly. He connected back.

"I'm not going to allow him hurt you this night."

Bella did not respond but she heard her. Two people entered the room same time Cloud pulled out the gun from his head. He rubbed his hand on his forehead because that was the normal thing to do, he could naturally do that with his mind but he had to be normal.

"Check him" Cloud told them.

He already knew from Cloud's body language that two of his technicians were coming to check him for a bug. Cloud was not taking any chances with him.

They brought out their bug detector and started moving it all over his body. He felt Bella's fears for him. She was also confused because her fears for him were involuntary, she just did not understand why she felt like protecting him from Cloud.

"That's because your body recognizes me Bella."

"Why are you calling me that?" she replied but turned to face Cloud. She rubbed her breast on his chest making Cloud groan.

"Baby, just a sec, they will soon be out and it will just be me and you" Cloud said grabbing her buttocks.

He heard a flash of Olisa's mind. He was thinking of one of the striper he was going to sleep with once Cloud had retired, he felt he might burst before then. The other from the first night was fantasizing about sex with Bella, he wished he would be allowed to have a taste one day. He closed up on all of them including Cloud. He focused on Bella. He heard Bella's question but he was not yet ready to answer her. The guys finished their search and found nothing but the second guy was staring at his huge wristwatch.

"Can I?" he asked.

"You don't need his fucking permission, pull it and check it."

He stretched his hands for the guy to check it for bugs but he started trying to pull it.

"No, that is where I draw the line. This watch is a gift from someone I love and I made a promise never to pull it off and I don't break my promise. Check it but we will have issues if you try to pull it."

And he was not playing. He did not use his gift but he was sure his voice was clear that he was not negotiating. It was a gift from Hadiya. She had made Jason produce it specifically for him, she had then made him promise to come back alive with Bella. But he knew he just placed Cloud in a dilemma. Cloud would not want to appear weak



before his men and also he would not want to start a war when he was yet to confirm him.

"I don't need to pull it to find anything" the dude said to Cloud. Smart guy, just saved his boss. Cloud nodded to him.

He brought out another bug detector, that one was very powerful. He placed it on the watch but did not get any signal. He started operating on the buttons. He was still suspicious of the watch. He wanted to check if he could discover a secret code that would open up to something that would give out signals or a device. He let him, there was boldness that came with having Jason as his technician, USA were still trying to recruit him. He did all he could, pressed all the buttons he could find, even tapped the screen and all the sides of the watch, then checked it again but nothing, no signal, no secret passage.

"I am hundred percent sure he is clear" the guy said to Cloud.

"Thank you Roy" Cloud said.

They nodded and left.

He heard Cloud's mind, he trusted Roy. Roy was a first class Computer graduate of University of Port Harcourt. He was Cloud's best technician. Cloud believed Roy that there was no bug. Like he had earlier thought, Roy was very good, as good as Hacker but he was still a baby when it came to Mark, so Jason was out of the discussion. There was only one way he would have been able to activate the watch. It needed a finger print which was positioned where no one would look. Even if they suspected it needed finger

print, they would not know it needed a code before a finger print which would not even work with the right or left thumb but the wedding finger which would also not work except with pressure which one had to apply for five seconds without stopping. He just hoped he would never come across the villain of Jason because he would not only need his gift but luck.

"I hope you are not expecting an explanation of what just happened, I don't trust you and I will never trust you. Now back to the deal." Cloud said.

"What do you have in mind?" he asked.

"Five million for this box and you can try out any of my strippers" Cloud said.

"No deal Cloud, I still want a night, just a night and you get two of these boxes" he replied.

Cloud pointed his gun at him.

"Seriously? We all know you are not going to try shoot me today, why pissing off over a negotiation."

"Your overconfidence may end you now Wild."

"But you won't shoot."

"Why the fuck do you think I won't blow off your fucking head for pissing me off?" Cloud asked cocking the gun.

Bella started shaking.



"Stop pissing him off, you have no fucking idea what he can do, what I have seen him do. Just take the damn fucking money" Bella thought, he heard her.

"I want you Bella, I want you more than anything right now" he answered. He wanted to show her a little of his feelings for her but changed his mind, it was not the right time. He decided to answer Cloud instead.

"Cause you are smart, smarter than others. So far, no undercover mission death can be traced back to you and only a smart person can survive and rule this area. You won't shoot when you know there is a possibility the feds will have you off their radar and I'm the only one who can make it happen."

Cloud looked at him, pulled down his gun and started laughing.

"You are one lucky son of a bitch. You are the first person I'm seeing as a good match but I still feel like blowing your head off. I feel like ripping you apart for even thinking about asking for her, but you know what? I will wait. I won't shoot you if your claims are false, no I won't enjoy it. I will slice you bit by bit and drink your scream and death is what you will start dreaming of."

He was not just saying it but he was imagining it, he saw exactly what Cloud had in mind. Cloud was serious so was he. He just found something common with him and Cloud. He was also planning on doing the same thing to Cloud.

"I'm happy you won't be able to have your fantasy cause I'm legit" he answered.

"Let me decide that. As for the deal, I will give you my answer tomorrow." Cloud said.

He nodded zipping the box but Cloud's mind was filled with multiple thoughts. He felt



Cloud close his mind to his worries, he was now focused on Bella.

"Tomorrow then" he said standing up as Cloud looked at him with disdain.

"Remember I mess up those who mess with me" Cloud shouted as he got to the door.

He turned and nodded. Cloud was no longer thinking about him, he was already grabbing Bella's buttocks. He left the room and few seconds later, he saw Cloud's guards were also out.

He still held on to the connection. He ignored the fact that Cloud had already lifted her see through gown and was already tearing off her bra. He spoke to her as soon as he got to the door.

"I'm calling you Bella because that's your real name."

He felt her froze before he pulled out with force taking her strength from her. He felt her fainting before completely cutting off the connection.

He entered his Jeep, ignited it, switched on his cassette player and as one of his favorite music started playing, he started driving nodding his head to the song.

"Pick two has been defended. My turn and I will just go with suspension, then hold on" he said increasing the volume of his cassette player and the speed of his jeep.



CHAPTER EIGHT

{Dreams and reality are sometimes confusing, especially when you are dreaming}
Guardian was putting her bag in her new room which was at the smaller house.

"Are you going to be staying here with me?" she asked as Guardian prepared her bed.

"No, my room is just opposite this room and my mum's room is beside your room"

Guardian said.

She became afraid, she did not want to stay in the room alone. Those scary men would come and throw her to the dogs.

"My mum is preparing our meal, I need to do something. You can rest now, I will come get you later" Guardian said squatting to her height.

She grabbed Guardian's waist before he could get to the door.

"I want to follow you" she cried.

"You are safe Lara. I need to do some things with my dad. You are safe here. I don't want you near my father again, okay?"

She nodded. His father was that huge scary man. She did not want to see him again. She did not want to see another blood and another foam falling from another man's mouth.

"I'm coming soon okay?" Guardian said wiping the tears from her face.



She nodded. She climbed the bed as soon as Guardian left. She wanted to sleep but she was afraid, there was light in the room but the room was too big and the light did not get to some areas of the room like under the bed. Almost when she allowed sleep to overtake her, she heard dogs barking. It was sounding close to the window. She remembered Guardian's father had said he would throw her to the dogs. She pushed her body to the wall, then used her palms to close her ears as she shook from fear. She screamed when the door opened.

"Hey Lara it's me" Guardian said pulling her hand away from her ears.

He joined her on the bed and pulled her to his body. She felt calm and warm and safe as Guardian tapped her back.

"Will the dogs eat me?" she asked.

"No, they will not. My father will never touch you. I will always be here to protect you, okay?"

She nodded.

"What of Papa?"

"He will come here tomorrow and you will be betrothed to me."

"What's that?"

"It means I will marry you when we are old. Mum said we are meant to be together and my father wants it so. He said either you are that to me or you are nothing. He does not want to waste his money."



But she did not understand.

"Is it bad? Am I going to feel bad?"

"No Lara. Mum said it means we will be together forever."

She raised her head to look at him.

"I want to live with you forever. I don't want you to leave me."

"I will never leave you Lara. You are very special to me. I will stay with you every day."

"You promise?"

"Yes, I promise."

She hugged him. She was very happy she would be staying with Guardian all the time.

"Lara I want to try something. I don't know if it will work."

"Will I feel bad?"

"I will make sure you don't feel bad."

"Okay" she said.

He pulled all of her to rest on his body, she grabbed his neck, she felt so warm and safe.

After some time, she started feeling something else, it was as if somebody was inside her body.

'Lara' she heard Guardian's voice in her head making her gasps. She was so shocked that she felt dizzy like she wanted to sleep but felt strong again.



'You are afraid Lara, it's me. Can you hear me?'

She nodded.

'Say it out.'

"Yes."

'Not with your mouth. Okay let's play a game. If I ask you something you think about the answer okay?'

She nodded.

'Do you love Guardian?'

'Yes, so so much. I am very happy when he is with me. I love Guardian more than Papa' she thought about the answer and Guardian started laughing.

She was confused because he had not yet told her to answer. Guardian started saying out what she had thought about. She gasps and tried standing up but Guardian did not allow her.

"Ssh Lara, it's okay. You are scared, don't be' he said but in her head.

She nodded but she was still afraid. She knew it was not normal.

'You want me to explain what is happening?' he asked in her head.

She nodded.

'You remembered what I did to your hand and head that were paining you?'



She nodded. She loved it so much, that was why she wanted to be with Guardian. She would never feel pain if Guardian was around. Guardian started laughing again, he must have heard what she was thinking.

'I cannot only remove your pains, I can now talk to you without opening my mouth and you can do the same, just think about what you want to say, but it will only work if you feel me in your body. Okay?'

She nodded.

"But I cannot feel Papa or our neighbors" she said.

'It's just us Lara. That is why we are going to be together every day and forever.'

'Is it a secret?' she thought, she wanted to try it again.

'Yes, don't tell anybody, they will treat us very bad if they know.'

"Okay" she said.

'I'm hungry' she thought.

'Food is ready Lara.'

She gasped.

'Don't worry with time you will get used to it' he said in her head.

'Okay' she thought.

She suddenly felt empty, he had left her body. She wanted him to come back.



"I don't want you to leave, come back" she protested.

"If I come back I will know everything you are thinking about. Do you want that?"

She nodded as long as she would feel warm.

"Okay, I promise to come back but I'm tired, it makes me tired Lara. Let's go eat okay?"

She nodded. He lifted her gently away from his body and it became worse, she wanted to gum back to him. She felt warm again, he had done the other thing he used to do to make her feel warm.

"How do you do that?" she asked as he held her hand.

"I don't know. Mum said I have a gift but my gift works more when I am around you."

"Then stay with me, you hear?"

"Yes Lara" he answered patting her head.

Guardian's mum was at the door when they opened it. She was looking sad like she had some bad news.

"Your dad is paying her bride price this night. I can't talk him out of it" Guardian's mum said.

She looked at Guardian but he also looked confused.

"I mean your father is marrying the two of you this night. He said there is no difference from when you are adults" Guardian's mum said.

Guardian did not answer, he just looked at his mum, the way he looked at others. She



needed to know something.

"Is he going to take me away from Guardian?"

She was so afraid of leaving Guardian. Guardian's mum squatted to her height and placed her hands on her shoulders.

"No sweetheart. It means you can never leave Guardian, it means when you grow up, you cannot say you won't stay with Guardian anymore. It's not right, marriage is what adults do when they are matured."

"But I don't want to leave Guardian, never" she said.

"You may change your mind when you grow up."

"No I won't, I want to be with Guardian."

"But it's still wrong, children don't get married. Your father is becoming worse every day" Guardian's mum said to Guardian.

She looked at Guardian, he was looking sad.

"I will go talk to him mum. Don't worry, I won't allow him to marry us now. I won't allow him to make me become like him" Guardian said.

"No" she shouted.

They looked at her.

"Please, I want to marry you. I will not say no when I grow up. Please, I don't want you to leave me."



She started crying. Guardian was not like his father, he was very good.

"You can't stop him my love. You've already played your cards. Please don't piss him off.
I don't want to imagine what he would do if you confront him again."

"But it's wrong. I hear you Mum" Guardian said.

"I'm sorry my love. Child marriage is not morally right but I know you will not become your father. I'm sorry for thinking that. Please just do what your father wants. Get married please, this is the only way you can protect her. Don't mind me. I will be here to teach you right from wrong okay? Lara wants to be with you, you can never be like your father" Guardian's mum said.

She stood up and pulled Guardian to her body. They hugged for long.

"Lara come, come give Mum a hug too."

She joined them for the hug.

"Your father is waiting, let's eat when we come back" Guardian's mum said leading the way.

She held on to Guardian and did not even pull out to welcome Papa who was sitting close to Guardian's father. Papa was not looking happy nor sad. He had lots of money in his hand. There was that white powder on Guardian's father nose.

"Here they are. The latest couple" Guardian's father shouted, his voice was too deep. It made her cling to Guardian.

"It's okay Lara, I'm here" Guardian said sitting down on a seat facing his father. There



was another seat Guardian's father asked her to sit down on but Guardian did not allow her. He carried her on his lap. Guardian's father started laughing.

"Lara do you want me to make you sleep?" Guardian whispered to her ears.

She nodded. Guardian placed his palms on her eyes. Her eyes became heavy.

Guardian's father was talking when she caved in to sleep but she was no longer afraid, she was wrapped in Guardian's body, he would not let anything happen to her. She later felt someone was carrying her and moving around, she felt her body touching the bed, she felt the warmth leaving her and held on.

"Ssh I'm here Lara" she heard Guardian's voice as he joined her. She pushed her body to him, he wrapped her in him, she was so warm as she slept off again.

Suddenly, she started feeling cold, so cold. She wanted to go back to the warmth but knew she was back from her fairy dream when she heard Saro's voice. She did not open her eyes. She tried to recover from the dream and tried to remember if it was her past but nothing clicked. She felt ridiculous for even thinking her dream could be a memory. She knew she was dreaming about her daughter and a Guardian. There was no way it could be a memory, no way in reality would someone as young as Lara get married to that young Guardian in her dream. She stopped trying to analyze her dream and turned her focus to reality. She could still remember what had happened. The huge man had spoken to her like her daughter and she had lost her strength. She froze.

'What the heck is going on?' she thought.

Could that man be the Guardian? Or was it coincidental? Or was she going crazy? He

had called her Bella, and he had said it was her real name. He knew her. He was someone from her past but her dream was about Lara, her daughter. She felt headache as she tried to fix the puzzle. She wished she could remember something, she had no idea about who she was.

She had thought a hunter was her dad, because he had made her believe so when she had woken up on a mat in a hut. He said he was her father and they had moved out few days later. He also said the ring which had been made as a necklace was her mother's ring. He had told her to never remove it from her neck. It was only at his deathbed, when she was just fifteen the man had told her he was not her dad. She never allowed him to explain. She had been so angry with the old man that she had walked out of the hut. She believed she was kidnapped maybe from a rich family were she would have been having a better life instead of being mocked as the daughter of an old hunter. By the time she had returned home later that night, he was gone. Even till now, she had not yet recovered from the shock, from her stupidity. She would never know her past and she got to know what suffering really looked like after some villagers had helped bury her father. She felt pain in her chest, it happened anytime she remembered him. She had not visited his grave for a long time. She felt tears run down her eyes. That old man was good to her and she had allowed him to die with regrets. That was why she was suffering. Nemesis were paying her back. They had been talking but Cloud's last statement brought her back to the room. He just asked Saro to confirm if she was not pregnant.

"No Cloud. She took her monthly shot just seven days ago and she had also seen her period. I don't think so but I'm sure you won't believe unless I prove it with a fact. I will



test her and rule that out."

"Rule that out? What the fuck are you a doctor for?" Cloud shouted.

"I don't know the shit you want me to do Gogo. When I got here she looked drained and her pulse was very weak. I told you to let her rest, not take her to sample her out, not take her to your business deal where she might have to be mounted by a giant who had not experienced a woman before. You think she would survive? I saw that dude before you went to your meeting room, he is fucking huge and will tear.."

"Can you shut the fuck up, I am not gonna let that happen. You do your fucking job as a doctor" Cloud shouted.

"Chill men, just chill. I will get my ambulance early morning so we can do a proper checkup, just chill. She is stable for now and I can see your second is back to normal. You were so scared men, are you sure you're not in love?"

"Fuck love and fuck you. You know what she means to me. My shit here won't stand without her."

"If you say so Gogo, so whatya gonna do about soldier guy? You gonna fuck him up or wait to find out if he is legit?"

"Olisa is coming with the message. It was delivered not long ago. I asked him to ring it out. I can't wait to fuck him up."

She did not want anything to happen to him, she wanted to find out about him, to find out if he was serious about her name being Bella and she felt so protective of him. She was in a mess. She wished she could warn him to run, then find a way to know what he



knew about her past, then find a way to understand why she kept dreaming about Lara and a Guardian who could do the same thing like her. Then, she understood, the answer to her puzzle was before her. Her dreams were mixed up with her sorrow and reality. She started having dreams about Lara and a guardian exact time Lara died, almost like her subconscious mind was trying to imagine a different life for Lara where she would have someone protecting her. Then her last dreams were a reflection of what the soldier could do with her. That huge man in her dream was exactly like the soldier. The only puzzle left was the name the soldier called her. She would find a way to solve that.

She heard the door being opened. She listened to their talks and knew Roy, Olisa, Saro and Cloud were the ones in the room with her. Olisa came with a flash drive Roy was about to play in a laptop he said was clean. After some seconds, she heard a new voice, it must be coming from the laptop.

"Thank you for the dope, it was pure. I read your message many times and I just did not get you. So I decided to make a video instead of writing because I will not be able to explain what you want to hear in writing. You wanted to know about the Special Force which I already confirmed to be true, but you wanted to know about their best team and their names and I just don't know why you want to know that. Their best team is independent of Special Force although they are still seen as Special Force but I think you must be mistaken and your Intel is not correct because they are legit. Yes they are real but they hardly go on an undercover mission except that mission has been declared dangerous and omega, meaning they will be leaving death in their wake. I think whoever you think is around is just a Special Force soldier. I won't know much about their mission because they are coded and encrypted but you gave me dope to give you

information about the best of the best and I will tell you but let's hope your Intel is not correct because they are worse than a drug lord's nightmare, they most times take order directly from the president and they are only sent when other teams of Special Force have failed. If you are wondering what omega mission means, it means they are sent to assassinate criminals who have been confirmed as murderers who the president feel they should not waste the Judges' time, but they carry out the investigation themselves before neutralizing their targets. Okay so as you asked, the best of the best is what we know them for, but I think they are known as The Circle...."

CHAPTER NINE

{The friend of your enemy is not always your enemy, some are needed to promote you to the enemy-Wild}

The voice stopped talking like it was paused but then the voice continued.

"They are about eight of them in that unit. It is every Special Force soldier's dream but it's almost impossible to get in because of the criteria. We don't know them by their name but by their code and we also don't know them facially apart from Special Force commander and their leader who represent them in any military activities. Cloud are you really sure one of them is around your territory? They are very dangerous and almost

impossible to waste. I don't have their personal files but I will tell you from what I have heard and what have been reported through the overall commander. Well you paid to hear about them just that I don't think you did anything to warrant their attention. Like I said, they are eight. I know their code name but I can only identify their leader because I have seen him few times. Lieutenant Ahmed is the general commander in charge of the Special Force. He has a daughter and she is among the Circle, that is the best team of Special Force. I can't remember her code name but she is good. Let me explain, there are so many criteria to enter the Special Force but the common one is that a soldier or navy or air force official must be able to defeat thirteen soldiers in a face to face combat and so on but for The Circle, he or she will not only defeat twenty soldiers, he must also beat at least six USA marines and score not less than ninety percent in all their trainings. You see why they are very few and you should have a hint why they are lethal. The Major's daughter is popular for ending Mr. Brown in Port Harcourt, oh you are even stay in Port, I'm sure you heard of Mr. Brown. Whatever you heard is wrong, even the newspapers were wrong. She castrated the other two men, then made Brown fight her for a chance to live but ended his life in seconds. Then Agege, I later heard she was the undercover agent for Agege, she worked for more than three months and was never discovered and she single handedly killed Agege's son and his entourage without having a scratch. There was one name soldiers used to whisper about her, I think Venus flytrap, yes, it's Venus flytrap. They said she is very beautiful but poisonous, then they used to call her fight 'death dance.' I almost met her that period, then I had visited the Special Force camp for few days.

Then there is this popular one, I think his name is Mark. If you followed the news



about Escravos male mermaid then I won't waste my saliva, he is the one.

Then there is one that give me chills anytime I hear report and read about his missions that is after it has been completed. His name is Ghost. Most of them were named by Ahmed based on their behavior. That one acts like a ghost. I'm sure you don't follow news about boko haram and northern bandits but if you read or listened to a news about some bandits dying on the roof, then he is the one but what you will read is different, they will tell you that Nigerian army killed thirty, twenty five, forty or more boko haram or bandits but that's a lie, it's just him.

Then there is Fast. Okay if you followed up on Ojogolo, then you should have watched that life military crackdown on him. Those are the guys you are asking about. Mark was the one in the water who destroyed arms smugglers single handedly, then Fast was the helicopter guy, you know what he did with the helicopter caught foreign attentions. I heard that was just a child's play, that he can fight someone while driving a bike and he won't get a scratch on the bike. Go find out about what happened to Ojogolo if you did not follow the news that time.

There is one they called sniper, I hardly know him but he was the soldier that stopped Biafra all by himself, although the real truth is that some foreign companies were trying to test their weapon in Nigeria. He was the guy who destroyed them, here is the bomb, that soldier can shoot a target down from more than a thousand yards, not too long ago I heard that he hit a thousand two hundred yards. I have not heard of him missing his targets and he is good with technology but he is more popular as a sniper. Much is not known about him because Lieutenant Ahmed had never mentioned his code name.

There is another one who left but he is back. That one is extremely dangerous, his name is Wolf, that is because he has a dangerous instinct. I saw him before he left after his friend had thrown himself on him seconds before a bomb exploded. This guy carried out his revenge immediately, that was when Boko Haram started, he single handedly ended the first sect. Had multiple bullets in his body but kept fighting till none of the sect member was breathing, then he went mental but he is back now. Like I said, they are not regular soldiers, but you paid to get information, I will give you. Wolf is not someone that should be around your territory, not a good news.

Then there is Beast, hmm, where do I start with that one. His real name is Obinna, we got to know because he was the soldier handling Ojogolo and Honorable Esegie's mission. If you watched the life crack down, he was that soldier on the ground. He is called Beast because he fights like one. The bank robbery in Benin, that unknown soldier, yes he is the one. He is huge that is all I can describe him, but that bank robbery is nothing. You remember lord Nero, your arch rival in south south, yea, the army did not engage him and his men in battle on different occasions if that was what you heard. He and his whole clan were ended by Beast. You heard me, he ended lord Nero, although it was personal. Lord Nero had killed his wife, that is one major reason their personal life is kept a secret and encrypted for very few high ranked officials. It was rumored that one of lord Nero's men knew him from home and had told lord Nero that the man around his territory was a soldier and you know how Nero used to punish his enemies, but he picked a wrong person because that woman was the only one taming him. He went berserk, left the army but he is now back. Ahmed used to say they were out of control that he was always cautious with them, he always made himself to see them as



dangerous deadly animals whenever he was around them, he said that long ago. He said he always had it in mind that he will be torn to pieces if he made any single mistake. Then they were just five.

The last one is their leader, he is totally out of control according to Ahmed. He is the one I can describe because I've seen him. I don't think you need much knowledge about him because he doesn't go for missions, the reason is because he is too dangerous. Ahmed said sending their leader on a mission was like sending someone to commit murder because he is too dangerous, even Ahmed can hardly control him and he has been able to unify his team that they will obey his order before Ahmed or the president. So according to Ahmed, he is always treading cautiously with him, although they seem to be in harmony now but I still don't like sitting close to him. Like I said, he doesn't go for missions because he burns that place to ashes, police won't even be able to identify the bodies. There was one mission I heard he was responsible for, kiko. If you heard about legendary Kiko who used to video the undercover agents he killed and who used to show his face on the camera claiming no one can stop him, even the president. I know you must have read that Kiko was also diabolical, no undercover agent survived and twenty soldiers who had a shootout with him had died with Kiko having no death to his team. Then one day, news went out that Kiko was dead after army invasion. Cloud there was no army invasion except you call Wolf and their leader army invasion. He worked as an undercover agent for just a three weeks and ended Kiko, I mean about two hundred people were destroyed by one person from Ahmed's report. Then he was a Major, then we could have access to many things unlike now that it is limited. From his report, Wolf was sent as backup and there was almost nothing to do when he got there.



But you don't need to worry about him because he no longer goes for a mission. You must be wondering why I keep repeating myself because it is important to check your Intel again because if it's true that someone from The Circle is around your territory it means you have caught the eye of the president and an omega order has been declared on you and it is carried out once they have an undisputable evidence of your crimes but if eventually the person is from the Circle, it won't be the leader because he is just too dangerous for internal affair. His missions are mostly external affairs. But you need all I know so I will just describe him but just know he doesn't do undercover missions, except, well just don't bother, he won't be the one. Their leader is huge, like Obinna, that Ojogolo guy, he is dark in complexion, looks like a Yoruba man. The first thing that came to my mind that first time I saw him is ancient warrior, he gives that aura of an ancient warrior and walks with authority like he is in control of everything. I was almost afraid that time he looked at me, almost like he was trying to figure out the best way to tear me to pieces. His voice is very deep, a baritone. But you have nothing to worry cause you won't see him, he does not involve himself with drug lords. Thanks for the dope. Oh I forgot, his name is Wild."

The man stopped talking.

"Fucking shit" Roy was the first to talk.

"Boss" Olisa said.

"Gogo I can swear on my life that the dude I saw few hours ago is who he called Wild"

Saro said.

"Boss every single shit he talked about, I read them, the bank robbery, Nero, Agege,



Edit with WPS Office

Ojogolo, the whisper about a roof guy soldier. Boss, Doc Saro is right. The guy Tayo just described matches with Wild."

Cloud had not yet said anything.

"But this is somehow good news if you look at the bright side Gogo. It turns out that he is really out of control and the said Ahmed cannot even control him and they work directly with the president. Good news is he is corrupt. No wonder he deals on foreign cases. He is offering you something, you said it before, you told me the guy said his mission was omega and the president is involved and they will believe any report he gives. Don't forget you also told me you did not mention any name to Tayo because you wanted to see what Tayo will say. Cloud you got this men" Saro said.

"So you want me to let him have Joan for a night for two boxes. He has ten boxes to offer, that is fucking five nights, then if he ask for another night for the fed deal that is six nights. And you think he will want to stop once he had tasted the forbidden?" Cloud shouted.

"Then what do you have in mind? Kill him?" Saro asked.

"You have no idea what is running through my mind. I am going to start with those who let those Special Force men escape. That is where the trouble started. I need to do something to cool my temper" Cloud said.

"But Boss why would he come himself? From what Tayo said it's a bit confusing" Roy said.

But it was Olisa who answered.



"He said the president heard Boss' message loud and clear and he decided to come after reading the survivors' report. He said he came because there will be a lot of money to harvest, but changed his mind when he saw her. Before Boss went to meet him, he was so consumed with Joan. Even though he was trying to hide his erection, it was visible and he was looking like he was experiencing it for the first time, it felt weird until he confessed that sex was the only thing lacking in his life and she had miraculously awakened his member. That was how the fuck up started. He asked Boss to give him Joan in exchange for the dopes and fed deal."

"Makes sense but Boss like Doc said, we just need to tread carefully like Ahmed, let's treat him like a wild animal."

"So you all want me to give Joan to him? You know how it will end, we are all guys and you know once you taste the forbidden you never want to stop" Cloud said.

"I know Boss but I have something in mind Boss. Let's play the game with him. Even a lion can be tamed or killed."

"When are you meeting him?" Saro asked.

"This night, it's way past morning, this night."

"Joan won't be ready. I suggest you tell him or rather play a video of Joan's state then give him Amara. I think Amara may perform a miracle too. Let him try out Amara" Saro said.

"Then what?" Cloud ask.

"Boss I have a plan. There is something more dangerous than the wild Boss, something



we can destroy him with without lifting a gun" Roy said.

"What the fuck is that?"

"Social media."

"I don't understand" Cloud said.

"I will explain later Boss. But I'm always on your side. We can take him down."

But she knew whatever she just heard about Wild was the least of Cloud's problem, Cloud had no idea the said guy could read minds. She did not know if she should tell Cloud and if he would even believe her.

CHAPTER TEN

(There are some memories that are worth remembering but only at the right time.)

He knew he was being followed as he drove around the town. He wanted to go through some of the areas Flight 18 had circulated and given visuals on. He could see the bird following him as he explored Port Harcourt. He drove past the underground house, it was currently not being occupied. He was going to attach Flight 18 to Cloud although nothing much would come out of it because Cloud hardly carried out his business in the open and most times, he gave orders. Attaching their listening gadgets

to areas Cloud frequented was too risky because of his computer gurus. Cloud was not like Ojogolo, Nero and other arms dealers or drug lords. His technicians might discover the gadgets and two things would happen, the gadgets would be destroyed, Cloud's belief on him being corrupt would end and Cloud might risk the repercussion by trying to eliminate him. Of course, he would not sit down and allow Cloud kill him, he would end the undercover mission too early and those who had been trafficked would be difficult to trace, some would never be located and that was what he hated most.

The mission would have been easier if Cloud was not rumored to be involved in trafficking, it wouldn't have even involved Circle, the Special Force could have handled it but if it came to Circle intervening, all one of them needed to do was to bait and provoke him to shoot the first shot and hell would be let loose, mission would be over in less than an hour but this was delicate. Ending Cloud without having the full information of those he had trafficked would be a failed mission. Cloud was the first drug lord to have powerful computer gurus as his staff since the history of drug lord syndicates in Nigeria and not just computer gurus, trusted ones. Cloud was not wrong to trust them completely because they almost worshipped him especially Roy, he could see Cloud was taking care of Roy. Although there was no excuse for what Roy was doing, half of the blame would go to the government. Nigerian government did not know how to treasure talented people like Roy. Cloud must be treated with caution and he must make Cloud to continue believing he was a corrupt soldier.

He finished his patrol, storing many routes and streets in his mind. He was also followed back to his lodge. He sent a message to Jason to hold on, he would tell him when to release their gadgets. He wanted to call his daughter but changed his mind, he

had nothing good to tell her yet.

He remembered the feeling he had the first time he saw Bella's picture. He had thought his mind was playing with him because there was that part of him that believed Bella was dead but he had recognised that face, those eyes, that ring. Hadiya had been the first to know, she had cried when she saw her picture. She was like a mother to him. He had been attracted to her because she reminded him of his mother. She was so young that time she had met him at her uncle's house. Her uncle was a retired general, still alive but very old. He always feared any call from that family because he knew there was a high chance that Mentor was dead. She later told him she got married to Major Ahmed at the age of seventeen. Her dad had wanted to marry her off at the age of thirteen but Mentor had rescued her. She said she had met Major in Mentor's house, then he was just joining the military. Even at Mentor's house, her family were still trying to take her away from her uncle because the rich Hausa man was still asking for her hand in marriage. But her uncle stood his ground and even one of her rich distant uncle had offered to pay off the money her family had received from the rich man but her family refused. She said she wrote her West African School Certificate exam at sixteen and still got admission at University of Lagos to study medicine same year. She was very close to Ahmed but they were not in love until she was kidnapped from her school. The kidnappers were sent by her father. She was forcefully dressed in their traditional marriage attire but Major Ahmed had rescued her as they tried to transport her to where she would be married off. He killed all three kidnappers. According to Hadiya, Major was coming to visit her the day the incident happened.

To stop any further attempts by her parents, Major had suggested they got married. She

said she had refused but accepted after weighing her options plus Major's proposal of not touching her without her consent. Her rich uncle paid a visit to her parents and after much discussions which must have involved a lot of money, they agreed to marry her off to Major with the belief her marriage would stop her pursuit for western education. Her father had been pissed off when he realized he was duped but there was nothing he could do. Major had kept to his word but stopped visiting her like always, she had thought his military job was keeping him off but she got angry a year later when she discovered his base was in Lagos. After confronting him, he had told her he was intentionally keeping his distance because he was in love with her, from the very first day she had entered Mentor's house, he had fallen in love with her and the only way he was going to keep to his word was to just avoid her. Somehow, something transpired between the two of them that night.

Remembering that story was making him smile. Hadiya had made sure to use alternative words because she felt he was still too young to know about sex, he was just seventeen and was just three months in Mentor's house. Then he had told her his own story, how he was already married at the age of eleven a day to his twelfth birthday and his bride was just four. So many events had happened that day. From revealing what he could do with his mind to his father to saving Bella and her dad from being killed, to his dad agreeing to the deal he had offered. He had told his dad he would be helping him fish out his bad workers and he had later tried to calm his mum's worries. His mum never wanted him to let his father know what he could do because she knew his father would turn him to a weapon but he needed to save Bella and her father and also his mum. But his father had taken things to the extreme when he told him Bella would not

be leaving his sight. His father did not see any reason he should waste money to feed someone who was of no benefit to him. He had seen his father's mind that night, his father thought he would be able to groom him to become as dangerous as he was, then his mum had told his father that they should be betrothed, at least he would be spending on his son's future wife. Before taking Bella to her room, his mum had explained the meaning of betrothed and he had liked that idea. Then he had done what he always wanted to do with Bella. He had tried to see if he could communicate with her with his mind, it had worked but it drained his energy at first. That night was still eventful because his mad father changed the plan to marriage. He had seen his mother's fears that he was going to become like his father and Bella would become a captive like her but Bella had been the one to intervene by crying that she wanted to marry him if it meant living with him forever. But the images and languages his mother was sending was not good, to her, marriage at their age was an abomination because of the things involved.

His mother had finally convinced him to obey his mad father who was already a time bomb. So as crazy as it sounded, they had been married that night and Bella's surname change to Adeola from that day, although he had put her to sleep. She refused to let him go after he had carried her to her room which later became their room because she always clung to him. He had no knowledge about sex and did not know what his father was doing to his mum was known as forced sex. They were just two innocent children being forced to do adult things. But that had helped a lot because his father employed Bella's father to paint portraits of him and to do other menial jobs. His father did not bother about Bella after the marriage and Bella always avoided him. When he had asked

his nanny what marriage entailed, she had answered that he would know when he grew up.

He had decided not to tap into peoples mind to find out what marriage was all about after trying so many times and failing. None were thinking about the word marriage, so he could not understand if what they thought about, like sex was marriage related. He had decided to live his age, just that Bella always like sleeping on top of him, not resting on his chest but climbing on top of him and using him as her bed, then she would ask him to connect them together and they would talk till she slept off. It became additive to have that warm body on top of him and to know what was in her mind, and it was ninety percent about him. But things had changed when he turned fourteen, when his organs became very active. The weirdest thing about it was Bella was just six, it was not supposed to happen according to his mum. Of course, he told his mum everything, there was no secret he kept from her, she even knew he could communicate with Bella. When he had told his mum the reactions he had in his organs, she had become confused on what to do or say but she had later called him to warn him not to try anything with Bella except he wanted Bella to die and his mum's mind was occupied with dread, but he had no idea what his mum was telling him not to try and she refused to tell him, he was so afraid that Bella would get hurt if he touched her whenever he felt a reaction in his groins so he had most times avoided her and her room until he was okay but Bella did not take it likely, that was few weeks before the invasion.

He had told Hadiya everything after making her promise to keep it a secret until the day he would find Bella. That was how their special bond was formed that day. But Hadiya told Major that she had a secret she would like to keep to herself, she begged

Major to help her keep the secret. Major had looked confused.

"Who do you mean lady? You have a secret you can't tell me and you want me to help you not to tell me?" Major had asked and she had nodded. The woman was just too dramatic and always made Major go crazy with her funny requests and demands. Major had looked at him to help and he had heard Major's mind. Major did not like secrets between them but Hadiya had trapped him and he had no idea what to do to know the secret his wife wanted him to help him keep. He could not help Major because the secret was about him. Whenever they came together to Mentor's house, the people around always loved watching their drama, then Doc was still young but out of control. Mentor had married three wives and had nine children, currently twenty grandchildren, Lara included. All were currently doing well but none followed their father's footstep. He had taken Lara to greet him, and he had heard his mind. Mentor had already accepted he would soon die. He had begged Mentor to hold on for his wife. After all the years of endless search, he just did not want Mentor to die without meeting the girl he had been looking for, the girl he had told everyone that she was his wife, the girl Mentor had told him to give up search for and find a wife to marry before he died. Everyone always believed he was joking by calling Bella his wife while some believed he called her his wife because he had wanted to marry her, the way children behaved when growing up, only Hadiya knew about everything. Mentor was in support of girl child education, he was against child marriage but he was still the average African man who valued a male child above a female child. He was the best friend to Major's late father, he had picked Major after his father was killed in the line of duty, Major's mother had died few years later after a brief illness, so Mentor was Major's family but was closer to Hadiya in

terms of biology because he was Hadiya's first uncle, yet he had been the one to suggest Major got a second wife that would give him a son since Allah had closed Hadiya's womb.

Major had one day surprisingly asked him to look into his mind and find out if something was wrong with him. He had told Major to replay what happened and he had started laughing. They were just too dramatic in that house. He could not believe the dude staying with Major had looked for a virgin prostitute and his daughter had acted as a prostitute just to see a male's erection. The dude was so clueless about sex and girls but hundred percent focused on training to hone his ghost skills. Major had pushed him back to the main issue which was his inability to be aroused by a beautiful naked lady. He had no interest in getting a second wife and he would have not slept with the lady Mentor had placed in a room for him, but he should have at least reacted to the sight but he did not. The man had been scared he had become impotent only to feel more than alive as soon as he sighted his wife. Then the quarrel that had ensued after confronting his wife of using charm on him not knowing he was confessing to seeing a naked woman. Funny couple. He had told Major that there was nothing wrong with him. His body had become one with his mind when it came to women. Most cheatings from men had not been as a result of lack of love for their spouse, it was mostly their body being too powerful than their mind. At that moment, their thinking faculty would no longer function until that desire was quenched. Although some managed to take control not because their mind was one with their body but because their morals and belief was stronger but the desire would still be there. But for Major's case, there was no desire because his mind had unified with his body's desire with the mind being the one on the



wheel, and as long as his mind was completely in love with Hadiya, his body would only react to her. Major had been so relieved after his explanation that he had actually carried out an experiment. With the permission of Hadiya, he had visited a motel which confirmed what he had told Major. They were crazy in their family, no wonder they gave birth to Doc, they had combined their craziness together to give birth to double crazy. And they also trained Ghost who turned out to be as crazy as them, just that Doc's craziness was most time tagged to her name by Special Force officers, they called her Crazy Sabrina. Even Ella, Ghost's wife was wary of her. She had attempted killing Ella the day Ghost had taken a bullet for her. If Mark had not stopped her, Ella would have died and Ghost wouldn't have survived.

Doc had apologized several times to Ella but Ella had always found a way to excuse Ghost and Doc whenever she came to visit her brother. Ghost had later asked him to find out what was wrong because he wanted his wife and sister to be in harmony. That was the deal he had made with Major concerning his team. He was not supposed to read them except permitted, he was told to rather use them to practice how to be normal. That was one reason he could not help Wolf when his situation had become worse, Wolf had refused to tell him what happened so he had let Wolf be. He loved the way things was with his family. Even without Major, he did not like to tap without permission except for Beast, his best friend. He had tapped into Ella's mind and discovered she was not really afraid of Doc but she was still filled with self-guilt about what happened to Ghost. She still felt she was not qualified to be a part of the family, hence her constant withdrawal from not only Doc but everybody apart from the children. Nobody could withdraw from those kids. He had talked to her and explained that her

actions were making Doc to feel guilty. He had to make her know Doc, though crazy sometimes, had the softest heart and was easily emotional and she was hurting Doc by avoiding her and also sending the wrong message. Her withdrawal had ended that day, that was a year ago. She was now so part of the family that she subconsciously saw the ladies as her sisters. If one could know what others were thinking, so many quarrels and separation wouldn't have happened. He was one lucky bastard to be blessed with that gift. He never one day had even a minor argument with Bella. If she felt he was doing her wrong, she had always asked him to connect so she would know for herself. Their separation had hurt him till he saw that picture.

Hadiya had finally told Major the secret of so many years ago after he had shown her Bella's picture, then the Circle all got to know what they had been dying to know about him. Then there was the fact that she had a daughter who looked exactly like the painting he had of her. He had painted the pictures of him and Bella a week after he had accepted Major's offer, after he was handed over to Mentor. Major did not take him to his house because he had been afraid he would be a bad influence on Doc. The only difference between young Bella and Lara had been their eyes. Lara had her grandpa's eyes. His decision had been made from the first picture he had seen of Lara, it was as if he was being pulled back to memory lane. He did not care who donated the sperm, Bella was his wife and Lara was his daughter. It was as simple as that. Hadiya had given him the wristwatch to celebrate the end of a long kept secret and to make sure he came back with her daughter-in-law. When he had seen Lara lying down on her bed, in her new room, he had felt his heart beat fast and it was painful. He had a daughter, he was one lucky bastard. Then the pain had doubled when he had wrapped her in him and smelled



that baby scent that came with children and innocence. He was going to recreate every damn thing Cloud did to her but he would make sure Cloud suffered ten times as his baby suffered. There was no excuse for assaulting a child. For the first time in his life, he was grateful his mad father had forced them to get married, because Bella was still his wife, bride price had been paid in full. It was going to help him a lot with what he had in mind. He checked his time, stood up and left his lodge to his jeep.

It was time to find out what card Cloud was going to play.

The person on his trail was still following him but there was something else, a threat and they were four waiting in front of him, just two minutes' drive ahead of him. The threat was meant for him so he could sense them almost like someone was shouting his name from a distance. He slowed the speed of his jeep and homed in to the threat. They were going to shoot at him once he got to their position. He parked his jeep and came out with just his fully loaded desert pistol. He followed the wave of the threat, it was like being caught up in a not too powerful whirlwind, it was like the feeling of getting pulled towards a particular direction by the wind only that he could become one with it and direct it to its source without following it. The four threats were together, making his work easier. He followed the waves and redirected his position to another road after entering back into his jeep. He changed to another route but instead of continuing towards the club, he reversed. They were still expecting him to drive through his normal route leading to a T-junction.

Before they realized they were under attack, three were already dead remaining just one but before he could fire at him, he had shot the hand with the gun.



It was already late in the night but the city was still lively. All the cars coming towards that area from whatever street or road started revising, while pedestrian started running different directions. The man was very stubborn because even in the midst of his injured hand, he still tried to pick his rifle to fire with just one hand. He got to him in time. He pushed the gun away and squatted so the man would see him. He tapped into his mind with force making the man shrink in pain. They were among the ones sent to kill the Special Force officers, he could hardly get anything from him because of the horror he was having, it was blocking everything but one thing that was clear was Cloud did not send them. Something was definitely wrong.

"Before you think I am super human, I'm not. The reason why I could enter your mind is because you connected to me first. The moment you became a threat to me, you lost your will to me. It's my body's way of protecting me. On normal occasions, I just read but can't connect."

He fired at his forehead killing the man on the spot. He had to explain because he did not want the man to die believing he was killed by a supernatural man. As for who sent them, he was going to find out in few minutes' time.

('Wild' continues on Saturday and Sunday)



CHAPTER ELEVEN

(The soul of the wounded crieth out, there is no end in sight)

She was in Saro's hospital, still on drip but it had been confirmed that she was not pregnant. She had been scared to shit when Cloud had suggested it. But something was wrong, Cloud did not feel relieved, it was almost as if he wanted her to be pregnant. And she knew there would be bigger trouble because Cloud had told Saro he wanted to talk with him outside her room. She hoped Cloud was not planning on doing what she was thinking, she did not want to bear Cloud's child.

It could have been a sudden change from Cloud because of the new threat with the name Wild. She knew what she meant to Cloud, she knew Cloud felt aroused only with her, now there was another person who had been aroused by seeing her and he also wanted to possess her. She would really need the deliverance she should have gone for long ago. Amara had said there was a prophet that could help her charm Cloud. Amara had said she would have done that if she was really interested in Cloud but she did not want to be available to just one man. It was not normal to be the one that aroused impotent or almost impotent men. She wondered what she would do if Cloud decided to give her to that man.

She should be afraid but she was not. It could be because she wanted to find out about what the man knew, she wanted to know if the man really knew her and her past before she lost her memory but there was the part where the man could kill her before the end of the day, he was just too huge for her.

Cloud did not come back after taking Saro away for a private discussion. That was more than five hours ago. It was past nine in the night. It was on Monday and she would have worked till just 11PM if she was not lying down on a hospital bed from what Wild did to her. She shook as she remembered the events, not just that but also her dreams which was somehow connected to Wild but confusing. She did not have the time to fix all her puzzles because Cloud and Saro entered the room. Cloud was on the phone with his Nokia torchlight phone because he was paranoid about being hacked and monitored. He would use the line and the phone for just a day before disposing it off.

"Tell Amara I want to see her once I enter the club, that would be in few minutes' time and make sure to alert me when he shows up" Cloud said, then ended the call. He was standing close to her bed.

He sat down and placed his palm on her breast, then applied pressure, then bent down to kiss her. She pretended like she was into him. He prolonged the kiss and she could feel he was getting aroused. He pulled back and looked at her lustfully and frustrated, like he could not quench his thirst because of her state.

"Baby what's with you fainting and all?" he asked huskily.

She had no answer to give, she just wanted to recover from the revulsive feeling from kissing Cloud. It had become worse ever since that man entered that club. Cloud touched her face with his palm, he looked worried. Something was definitely wrong with Cloud, there was no way Cloud would fall in love with her. It was not a good news. She had so many things to worry about but she was beginning to hyperventilate, she had not yet taken her shot for the night.

"When are you going to shoot me a dope?" she asked trying her best not to look into his worried eyes.

"When you are fit to walk" Cloud responded making her to panic.

"No, Cloud please. Saro said I will be discharged tomorrow. I won't be alive by then if I don't get a shoot. I'll do what you want..."

"What I want is for you to fucking stop fainting. You are ruining business and my pleasure. I fucking had to make do with another shit of a girl. I am still fucking thirsty. What's with all your fainting stuff? You'll thinking I'm holding you captive, yet all the girls want to be in your place. I need to fucking quench my thirst and I can't do that with you fainting, you're making me lose my fucking mind" Cloud shouted standing up.

"Please, I promise I won't faint, please do any fucking thing you want with me. I'm strong now, you can do it here, just don't keep my dope away, please" she pleaded already panting.

Cloud looked like he was considering her offer but Saro shook his head at Cloud.

"Saro I'm good, stop it, he can take me" she was almost in a state of delirium.

She did not care what she would feel if Cloud decided to have sex with her right there in the hospital, all she knew was she needed her shoot. Cloud kicked the bed in frustration as he brought out a syringe from his pocket. She felt elated and started salivating as Cloud came close to her but he was not allowed to shoot her the drug because Olisa entered the room. From the look on the face of Olisa, she knew there was trouble.

"Trouble Boss" Olisa said before anyone could ask what was wrong.



"Spill" Cloud asked.

"I just get a message from Marvin. They fucking tried to eliminate him to thank and please you after sparing their life."

"Can you come out clean?" Cloud asked.

"The four who were part of the guys who did not do their job well and allowed those Special Force soldiers to escape just attacked Wild. You shouldn't have listened to Roy and spare them. Marvin thinks they wanted to redeem themselves. They had no fucking idea you were not ready to end him now."

There was silence, nobody spoke for some seconds.

"So?" Cloud asked.

"They failed, all four are fucking dead. Marvin said none could fire even a single shot. Whatever shit Tayo said is fucking true. Marvin said he was not even aware the guys were waiting to shoot him down through his windscreen. He said the guy had suddenly reversed his jeep and followed another road and had surprised the four men. He said he handled a gun like he had been using it from birth. He said that Ifa was the last person he killed after shooting his hand and walking up to him. He had no fucking idea what Ifa had told him but he is right now on his way to the Club" Olisa said.

"Fucking shit. I should have blown up their fucking head few hours ago. Now the shit is bad. I am not fucking afraid of a war but it's bullshit fighting a war I can avoid" Cloud shouted.

"Did Marvin say any other thing? Like his body language before entering his jeep?" Saro



asked.

"Nothing, just said he was looking like he stopped to get a can of coke. Guess he has become used to the shit."

Cloud's phone started ringing.

"Yeah, okay, I am on my way" Cloud said after listening to whoever was at the other side of the line, then ended the call.

They looked at Cloud to say something.

"He just get to the club, time to find out if there is gonna be war" Cloud said standing up.

"Should I gather more guys?" Olisa asked as Cloud started walking to the door.

Cloud turned to look at Olisa.

"Do what you think is best, you are in charge of that, you shouldn't be asking me."

"Okay Boss" Olisa said walking to open the door for Cloud but Cloud had not giving her the dope.

"Cloud please" she shouted panicking.

She knew it was very dangerous to interrupt Cloud in his angry mode, but nothing Cloud would do to her could be compared to not having her dope. Cloud turned and looked at her.

"You'all excuse me" Cloud said.

"Gogo, she is not..."



"Get the fuck out" Cloud shouted.

Saro knew when to stop pushing Cloud. They left the room leaving her to her fate. She expected Cloud to start hitting her but he did not. He hurriedly undressed her, tearing her clothes in the process. She felt pain and revulsion the moment he invaded her. Her body wanted to run away from Cloud. She had to bite her lips to hold her body from fighting Cloud. Cloud saved her from the repulsive feeling when he shot her the dope on her arm. The effect was instantaneous, she started feeling pleasure that came from the drug, she felt alive, happy, and free. Her mind was no longer in the room, neither did her body feel Cloud on her. She felt so happy but as usual, the feeling did not last. She was glad the effect waned same time Cloud was through with her. He kissed her after putting on his clothes.

"Now I can think straight" Cloud said leaving the room without saying anything to her.

She wished she could have another shot, she hated the reality she was living in. She felt pains all over her body, she felt dirty but the worst feeling was the feeling of hopelessness. She started crying, there was no way out of her misery. She was trapped with Cloud till death.

('Wild' continues tomorrow)

WILD: No room for the weak

CHAPTER TWELVE



Edit with WPS Office

{The heart of man is evil and desperately wicked}

Cloud was not in the club when he entered, Bella too and Olisa. He went to order for a drink and sat down on one of the empty stools. He counted the number of Cloud's securities and he came out with the usual number. He tried to trace Bella but could not, he really needed to try out what he had in mind, he was hundred percent sure it would work. He felt heavy glances directed towards him. Cloud's security were wary of him. He checked the time and set his stop watch to ten minutes, he would be leaving if Cloud did not show up. He saw Roy coming towards him, he was coming to tell him that Cloud was on his way and there was something else, something about the men he just killed. He focused on his drink as he waited for Roy to get to him.

"You came early today" was Roy's greeting.

He nodded without turning to face him.

"Boss is on his way."

He also nodded.

"He wants me to escort you to the meeting room."

He nodded and stood up.

"You've gone dumb or what?"



Roy said in frustration. He ignored him and walked towards the exit door. Roy had to hurry up to meet up with him. He did not want to waste his words on someone irrelevant to him. As soon as they entered the room, Roy searched him for a bug, then sat down on a seat opposite where he was sitting. Roy was trying to study him, to figure out why he looked so calm even after he had been attacked. He closed up on Roy and homed into his environment. There was something off, the securities were now more than sixty and he could feel the weapons with them were powerful weapons. He tapped into Roy's mind but did not get any information concerning the increase in security. Roy was rather thinking of how he was going to bug the room he would be given to sleep with Amara.

That caught his attention.

Cloud was planning to give him someone else and Roy was planning to bug the room, although Roy was still not certain whether to wait for when he would be given Bella, after Bella must have recovered and must have been discharged from the hospital. That explained why he could not sense Bella, he must have gone too far with what he did but he was happy that she had not recovered for Cloud to rape but he was wrong because he knew Cloud just finished raping her the moment Cloud entered the room with five guards including Olisa and the guy from the first night. Cloud was still relieving the pleasure he had from raping a girl on a hospital bed on drip. It took all his will to hold the wild part of him down. He was going to rip Cloud to shreds, literally.

Cloud sat down feeling light like he just cleared his mind. Cloud felt he had sex with Bella, his mind was already twisted and he needed to be through with the mission, he was losing it.



"Although I feel the same way, I was not the one who sent them. You're looking at me like you are about to pounce on me. Not only you, the feeling is mutual but be assured I did not send them" Cloud said. He was sitting down, legs crossed.

If only Cloud knew that was not the reason he wanted to strangle him. It was better that way, at least he could pretend and go along with Cloud. He tapped into Olisa and got what he wanted. Cloud thought he was coming to retaliate for the flimsy attempt on his life and Olisa was increasing security because of that. He could end all without lifting a gun, all they needed to do was to target him with the aim to kill him, he would just take over from there. It would surely happen and he could not wait to release his anger on Cloud. Kiko would be a child's play because he had even shot Kiko, a luxury Cloud would never have.

"Why're you not saying anything?" Cloud shouted.

"What do you want me to say? Some men tried to kill me, I killed them. It does not matter who sent them. It's as simple as that" he replied.

From their expressions, what he said was far from what they were expecting to hear. For a split second, he sensed fear coming from Olisa and the others, but Cloud was thinking, he was thinking if there was a possible way out without involving Bella. He felt Cloud's anger building, he could not bear having someone enjoy Bella except him, but he had to listen to Roy and Saro's advice.

"I can't see the boxes" Cloud said.

"Same way I've not heard your answer to my offer."



Cloud started laughing. He could not believe someone would ever answer him back the way he was answering him. Cloud started imagining how he would rip him apart with a knife, if only Cloud knew the feeling was mutual.

"You say two boxes for my girl, and the feds would be off my territory."

"In plain word, it means five times for Bella, I have ten boxes and the fed deal is another night."

Cloud looked at him, the anger was now visible. He was battling with his mind, his mind wanted him to just take his gun and shoot him and damn the consequences.

"Boss, she is here" Olisa called.

Olisa was smart, Cloud had to have smart people around him. Olisa's intervention calmed Cloud a bit. He turned and nodded to Olisa.

The door was opened by one of Cloud's guard and a lady entered. She was the lady in the mind of Olisa the other night. He could sense Olisa's anger towards him. Olisa felt possessive of her but the lady felt she was available for the highest bidder. She was physically beautifully and very busty. She was on a see through net red gown which was barley touching her lap. She was naturally okay but still did not attract men like Bella who was not that humanely endowed like her. Bella just had a sexy lure, the plain word was she made men think of just one thing, sex. She greeted everybody and waved a hi to him. He nodded.

"Bella is sick, she is at the hospital right now and I can show you prove if you want one."

He turned his attention to Cloud. Cloud was struggling to be the man he was not. He did



not explain things, he gave orders but what Cloud did not understand was it was still the same thing with him. He started giving orders way before Cloud knew what a gun looked like.

"I heard whispers about it" he answered Cloud.

And he was not lying, he just did not elaborate how he heard the whispers.

"Then you should know she is not available. Amara is available for now" Cloud pointed to Amara who blew a kiss his way.

"Nope. Bella or no deal" he replied.

"This just a fucking present. Bella would be ready tomorrow. She might fucking solve your problem before then" Cloud said, the anger was visible in his voice. He was even struggling to keep his hands away from his pistol as he told him Bella would be available the next day.

He wanted to reject the offer because he knew it was a waste of time, but he stopped. There was something off coming from Amara. She was pissed off at his rejection although she was smiling outside. She was thinking about the American oil worker she would have slept with if Cloud had not intervened. She had even poisoned an outside competitor and was angry she was not yet dead. The lady was still battling with her life when she visited the lady who was actually one of her best friends who had introduced her to the white man. Her mind flashed to her last sight of her neighbor's missing daughter who should already be servicing one Alhaji as a sex slave. She hated seeing the neighbor. From her mindset, she felt seeing them was making her look bad

for making money.

"As long as the deal still stands I'm in" he said.

Almost immediately, he understood the reason for the free gift. They had already lectured Amara to make sure she got him aroused. Cloud still wanted to find out if he was lying about Bella resurrecting his manhood or if he was just one of the men trying so hard to have a taste of Bella, then Olisa was furious that Amara was going to spend the night with him.

"You make sure you come with the dope tomorrow, I have to leave, don't want to shoot you when you're still useful" Cloud said standing up.

"Roy will get you a room" Cloud said as he got to the door.

"I don't need anyone to show me any room. I have a lodge" he answered Cloud.

Cloud stopped his movement and became stiff. He nodded after some seconds and left without turning back. He did not need to tap into Roy, his body language was enough. Roy felt disappointed but was happy he had prepared Amara for plan B. He stood up and nodded to Amara. She felt insulted by his nonchalant attitude towards her. She expected him to grab her by her arms or throw some sexual advances his way. He felt the deadly anger coming out in waves from Olisa. He ignored him and walked outside to his jeep.

"Wow, this fucking Prado is yours?" Amara shouted already running to the front seat door.

He did not answer, he just entered the driver's seat and ignited the jeep after unlocking



the door for Amara. She entered feeling frustrated but changed almost immediately. She had a dumb hope that she would be able to sniff out money from him.

Amara talked throughout his drive to his lodge, he did not answer her. He felt being followed but not threatened.

"Do you know how to communicate?" Amara queried as he came down from his jeep after driving into his fenced lodge. It was a two bedroom flat, an additional house to the owner's five bedroom duplex. He was the only one in the compound because the owner was abroad, something New Orleans. It was Jason who helped to secure the lodge with a year's rent already paid. He went to his door, unlocked it and entered. He waited for Amara to enter before shutting the door.

"Wow, you have a nice taste..." he grabbed her hand and pulled her to the second room. He wanted to search her for bugs but changed his mind. There was no bug, the plan B was her witness account of what happened. But he still had to do something, at least live up to their expectation of him. He asked her for her phone and switched it off.

"I was told you are important to Boss" she said rubbing her palms on his chest and pushing her busty breast to him.

He allowed her, she must be able to describe everything that happened, if possible she should be the one to publicize his impotence and also his brutality.

He could not read her mind about the trafficked girl except she thought about it and he was going to make her to. She moved away from him and slowly pulled off her gown. He sat down on one of the chairs watching her. After her gown, she undid her bra, then



went fully naked. She was monitoring his reaction and he could see her anger that he was not yet aroused. He stood up and went out of the room. He collected the available resources and came back. She was lying on the bed and she was thinking of the man she would have been sleeping with and the money she would have made. She looked his way, her eyes started sparkling when she saw the bundles of money he was carrying. He threw a bundle at her.

"Two more bundles if you allow me do it my way?"

"What way?" she asked.

"Rough and wild's way."

"I like it rough and wild" she said kissing the bundle of one thousand naira notes.

He nodded and walked to the bed. He turned her to lie on her stomach and tied her hands and legs to the bedpost. He tapped into her mind again, she was thinking about an experience she had with Olisa. Olisa was the one who introduced her to wild sex, she had no idea that was different from Wild's way. He sent the first lashes on her back and sent another one. She started screaming and pleading as he whipped her. There was no neighbor but he still looked for a handkerchief and pushed it into her mouth. He whipped her till he felt she would faint from the pain. Then he suggested what she had thought about. That was one way he could make someone think about what he wanted to know, he would just suggest what he had heard them think but it only worked when the person's mind was in shambles mostly from a great distraction, he chose pain in her case. She must be made to have a bit of what the girl she had deceived and sold to Cloud was experiencing.



He started understanding his mum more after he started debriefing rescued trafficked victims. It always took a little light out of him anytime he had watch what they had experienced in their mind. It helped that he still held on to his mum's beliefs, because he would not be satisfied that death was the end for those evil, they needed a burn in hell for their evil deeds. He still read mysterious areas in the bible because he wanted to understand humanity better. Wickedness started as early as the bible times. He remembered the man whose wife was raped to death by the men of Benjamin, how he had divided his corpse and sent to the twelve tribes of Israel. Women had been subjected to unimaginable torture by men who God created. Sex slavery, rape were not new, they were old practices. Sodom and Gomorrah were few examples. Their sins were so grievous that sodomy, a form of illicit sexual practices was gotten from Sodom and God had to wipe them out. He had studied the bible to compare wickedness in the bible times and wickedness in the present world and he was beginning to see that Sodom and Gomorrah were almost becoming saints and they would judge the current world because they were not as evil as the current world. It was like someone would just sit down to think of how to beat the history record of evil, a result of free will. The only thing that had always kept him from getting lost in the darkness he saw from debriefing sex slave victims were their light, their kids. He was almost lost back then but then Halima was rescued as a sex slave held captive for fourteen years. Halima had thought he had helped to debrief her but no, she had debriefed him. The first time he had tapped into her mind, he had seen pure light, whiter than the whitest bulb and she had released rays from it to his mind, it was like getting out of a hot son to a tree shade. Kung Fu master who was now late, had told them that there were people like Halima, that their pureness

attracted both good and evil. He had not believed him until he saw Halima, she recovered so fast because even after fourteen years of being held captive, her light could not be quenched and he was yet to meet another Halima.

The last one he had debriefed before taking this mission had been messy, he had to connect to their second fortress to watch the children after the debriefing. The lady was already thirty five. She had been trafficked from her village ten years ago by a rich woman who usually visited the village to pick girls with the promise of giving them a good job, but she had been drugged and had been locked up in a room where men came to rape her every day till she was rescued by Doc after a tip off. He was glad Doc had made a video of the shootout. She had castrated the man managing her before killing him. The issue was not only with the victims' masters, it was also with the depraved men who paid heavily to rape someone and carry out their sexual fantasies without getting caught.

He was brought back to reality by Amara's mind. She was thinking of exactly what he wanted her to think. He had made sure he suggested she imagined what the girl would be experiencing. She felt regrets at what she had done, she could not imagine someone might be passing through what she was passing through every day. He got the picture of the girl from her mind, the girl was about to write her senior school certificate exams and was having the usual teenage rebellion which Amara had helped to fuel. She had told the girl to sneak from her parents' house and meet her at a location and she should make sure nobody knew about it. He stored the location in his mind. Amara had waited for the girl with Olisa and two other men who grabbed her and raped her through her anus because the Alhaji wanted a virgin. Amara had watched everything without



emotions. She had felt the girl got what she deserved, she believed it was the girl's stubbornness that led to her captivity and not her. They had taken the girl away and Olisa had told her Cloud would settle her later which he did the next day, she was paid two hundred and fifty thousand which she had already squandered, which was just two months ago. But at the moment, Amara was feeling bad, she was regretting her action, she was the architect to a girls' slavery. She had joined to console her parents, she had even told them the girl might have ran away with her boyfriend and would come back when she was tired. He pulled out from her mind and whipped her over and over again. What she was feeling was nothing compared to what sex slaves felt. He did not want to think of the despicable thing they were forced to do, or things they were forced to sleep with. He pulled out the handkerchief from her mouth and turned her to look at his groins.

"It did not work but I keep to deals" he said throwing the remaining bundles of fake notes. She would discover later they were all fake.

She was so much in pains that she did not respond to the cash. This was what she wanted, money, enough to sell an innocent girl to slavery, enough to poison a friend who told her a white man was beginning to fall in love with her. But at the moment, her mind was still trying to absorb the pains from the whipping. Tears were still flowing from her eyes.

"The extra bundle should take care of your treatment. Dress up and get out."

Amara turned to look at him, anger, pains were written all over her face, there was no fear yet.

"You are evil beyond redemption, you said you liked it wild, this is not wild, I can't stand



up, you..." she stopped speaking, she groaned from the pains as she tried to stand up.

He pulled her out of the bed which was now stained with her blood. She screamed from pain but he ignored her. He forced her to look into his eyes, she became afraid. He pushed her back to the bed, the impact made her scream. He picked her phone and switched it on. He gave her the phone to call Olisa. Immediately she ended the call, he wrapped her with the bedspread, forced her to pick her undies and dragged her outside the gate, he locked the gate, then locked his door. She was screaming throughout, it would take days for her to recover but weeks before she could book another man but she might never be able to strip again but she was still free unlike the girl he had to rescue, unlike the others Cloud had trafficked.

Few minutes later, he heard the sound of a car. Few seconds later, someone was pounding on his gate. It was Olisa.

"I am going to kill you" he heard the distant shouts of Olisa.

He went to his room and climbed on his bed. He could not wait for Bella who was his real deal. As he slept off, he crossed checked the cards he had played and the ones he was yet to play, but he knew that the main game was starting the next night.

CHAPTER THIRTEEN

{In the wild, one of the most important skills needed to hunt a prey is 'waiting'}

It was around 1:AM Cloud entered her hospital room with Saro. Saro said she was good to go but she knew the idea had come from Cloud not Saro. She felt pains as she came down with the help of Saro. She held on to Saro for balance as he escorted her to Cloud's car while Cloud walked with them totally absent minded and looking pissed off. It was never good anytime Cloud looked that way.

The streets were silent as Cloud drove to his apartment. He had not yet said anything to her. He still did not say anything as he led her to his room. He told her to go take a shower immediately they entered the room. Cloud was sitting on one of the couch in his room when she came out from the bathroom, with just her towel. The towel was at least long enough to touch her laps. Cloud turned to look at her as she tried sorting out her clothes from her bag in the wardrobe. She felt him before he touched her. Without saying anything to her, he removed her towel and she could see his lust filled eyes. She was not ready but she knew what would happen if she made any attempt to resist him. A call for Cloud saved her. His phone was ringing. He left her to pick his phone which was on the bed.

She was confused whether to put back her towel or to stand and wait for Cloud. She picked the towel but Cloud shook his head, then signaled for her to face him. She did as instructed but she was shaking not because of fear but because she was still weak and needed to rest. Cloud had not spoken, he was listening to the person on the other line. He signaled for her to spin and she did as instructed but before she could fully complete her spinning, Cloud shouted.

"What the fuck do you mean?"



She thought he was talking to her but he was not.

"Where is she right now?" Cloud asked.

He was looking more pissed off.

"I'm coming" Cloud said cutting the call.

He kicked the bed and smashed his phone on the ground, then turned to look at her.

"Lie down on the bed and wait for me, don't put anything on."

She wanted to tell him he had already overused her and she wanted to rest but she wouldn't dare Cloud at the moment. She nodded as Cloud walked out of the room. She climbed on the bed and started crying. She quickly wiped her tears when she heard the door being opened, it was not up to a minute Cloud left but he was back.

"I change my mind, put on your clothes and follow me" Cloud said.

"Cloud I'm sore and tired, can't I rest....."

His palm landed on her head stopping her speech mid-way. He hardly hit her on places that would be visible in case she got injured in the process. Although he sometimes punched her, enough to break bones but not enough to leave physical and visible marks.

He hit her three more times.

"I have told you to never question my decision on anything" he shouted hitting her again.

"I'm sorry, it was a slip of tongue" she cried.

"I will crush you if you don't get to my car in the next three minutes."



He walked out of the room, closing the door with force.

Amidst the stabbing pains on her head, she quickly rushed to put on a gown, bras were not needed just her panties. She ran all the way to the car. Cloud's security men on night shift looked at her warily as she ran to meet up with time. Cloud had already ignited the car and was driving even before she closed the door of the front seat. She had no idea if she kept to time and Cloud did not even say anything. He was driving towards Saro's hospital making her wonder what was wrong.

Olisa was standing at the entrance of the hospital and ran towards them as soon as Cloud stopped at the hospital. She came out almost same time as Cloud.

Something was terribly wrong because Olisa who was hardly pissed off was mad with rage. Cloud looked at him and nodded, no words were spoken as Olisa led Cloud to a private room.

She gasped and shifted back immediately she saw who was lying down on her stomach, her back looking like she was whipped with a chain and there were so many injuries.

"I put her to sleep because of the extreme pain she was feeling" Saro said. He was sitting down on a blue plastic chair looking tired and sleepy.

Cloud nodded. She turned to look at Olisa, he was breathing fast from rage.

"This doesn't make sense. What the fuck is this?" Cloud said.

"She said he had not responded even after she had stripped naked. Then he had suggest they go wild only for him to tie her up and just started whipping her. He even pushed a cloth to her mouth to muffle her scream, then showed her he did not feel



aroused. He wrapped her with his bedspread and dragged her outside his gate after forcing her to call me to come pick her up" Olisa explained.

"So his claim is true but I still don't understand the reason for this. What the fuck will he benefit from whipping her this way?" Saro asked.

"I think he is baiting you. He wants war and I am going to give it to him" Olisa raged.

"No, I don't think he is baiting me. He had rejected her at first then changed his mind. Something made him change his mind. Even when he knew Amara won't work on him, he still agreed to take her with him. He knew I was testing him. He is playing a game but I just don't know the card he is holding but I will wait. He is wild, I am Cloud, I oversea the wild and I can decide to drown him or send lightning to strike the wild. All I know is the main game is starting this night" Cloud said.

"So are we going to ignore what he just did?" Olisa asked.

"Olisa I know you are pissed. I won't act like I do not know how you feel. I know Amara is special to you but we can't strike without knowing his game plan. Revenge is best served cold not hot cause you will gradually destroy him and you will enjoy it. The longer the better but you need to use your wit more than your emotions. He just played a warning card and I am not going to respond until I see what he would be playing next."

Cloud's words did a magic on Olisa because he was no longer furious, he was even looking at Cloud in awe. Saro was already sleeping.

"What if he does same thing to her this night?" Olisa asked.

It dawned on her what Cloud had planned for her.



"No Cloud, please don't send me to him, please. What if I fail to..."

She went on her knees, she was too sore and not ready to satisfy a huge man like Wild who was impotent except with her. She hated her life but did not want to die. Her mind told her that she was over panicking about wild and there was something important she needed to remember but the horror in front of her from wild's animalistic behavior was blocking her ability to think. She thought of the revulsive feeling that came with sex and started shaking, she was yet to get used to Cloud and she was not ready to add another terrible sensation from a wild creature without control.

Cloud turned to her. She expected him to hit her but he did not, he surprisingly pulled her to him.

"Sssh, I also don't want to but there are more to gain than to loose and you are the only way to get it. I feel like tearing him to pieces anytime I almost think about what I'm going to make you to do but it's just a night" Cloud whispered to her ears.

But he was lying, she heard everything.

"I may not survive just a night Cloud. Please don't do this to me. I thought I was just look but don't touch" she pleaded.

"Baby is just one fucking night and I am the one who is pissed off. I don't want to even think about the fact that.....fucking shit. Baby, I promise I will make sure he would not whip you and I will make sure I tame him."

"How?"

"Roy has plans to make him be at my beck and call. You can do it. I will make sure he



makes a promise not to whip you, just one night baby and this will all be over. You get a lot of dopes baby, as much as you want."

That got to her. She pulled out and looked at Cloud.

"You promise?" she asked.

"Yeah and the feds will be off my territory. Roy will prepare you later today. You make sure he pays for what he did to Amara."

She turned to look at Amara but she could not bear seeing the torn skin. Even Cloud had not whip her or any woman like that. She just could not understand how a human could do that to a lady. She had no idea what the day had in store for her but she was sure of one thing, there would be enough dopes to take her away from reality no matter what would happened. She knew that because Cloud always kept to his promise.

"Just a day and I got as many dopes as I want?" she asked Cloud for more confirmation.

"Yes" Cloud answered.

"Boss, are you sure he would not be able to sniff out a bug? Amara said he switched off her phone." Olisa said.

"That's why I said the main game is starting this night" Cloud answered.



CHAPTER FOURTEEN

(Inspiration can come from unexpected places)

He had so much on his mind and he was still pissed off with the wickedness of Amara and he could not explain why he felt angry whenever he remembered Bella was still with Cloud. The wild part of him was trying to take over. He needed a little debriefing and there was no better way than connecting to their second fortress, for what Ghost called their reality show.

It was just 6:39 in the morning but they were all outside as usual for their regular farm and garden work and exercises. But it looked like there would be exercises before farm and garden work. They were all exercising. There was a music being played at the mini gym, Undertaker's entering song before his wrestling match. Wolf and his little pup were doing press up. John was one hell of a nut to crack, he was striving to meet up with the speed of his dad and he was so eager and happy. It was cute watching dad and son exercising together. Beast was showing GG how to punch a target, he was using silicone robot to show them. Lara was learning the basic stage of karate, Pearl was her tutor. He could see the determination in her eyes, almost like she was trying to make sure she would be strong when she became big like her mum to prevent someone like Cloud from harming her. Ghost was lecturing Ella, Mena, Cindy and Halima on how to free oneself when tied with a rope. At the moment, Cindy was the one tied and she was almost through with freeing herself. Lastly, Jason was monitoring AI's strength. She was currently trying to lift a thirty kilogram mass. The highest she had lifted was twenty five. She succeeded and Jason recorded it on his tab. His phone blinked once

indicating someone had joined the show. His flat screen TV which he had connected to his mini system which was connected to his phone was currently split into five scenes. For anyone he wanted the audio, he just tapped the audio symbol on the screen of his phone. He had earlier read about the progress of the Special Force officer in coma. He was still unconscious but Stone was recovering faster than predicted. They had fought bravely and even taken down some of Cloud's men even though it was a betrayed ambush they were not expecting. Stone was badly injured, his chest was torn yet he was able to carry his unconscious comrade and he was able to escape to where he contacted his team to come pick them up which was a place far away from Cloud's territory and the men who fought them could not be linked to Cloud because they were unfamiliar faces yet they knew Cloud had sent them, but knowing was not enough evidence, it was not even counted. The Circle House, Abuja was also now being occupied by the Python Special Force team, about twenty five of them with their family. The smallest lodge had just two rooms, meaning, two bedroom flat and they were about two hundred and fifty rooms available. The decision was made by The Circle after everybody voted for it and none against. The python team were next to the Circle and they had agreed to start doing the trustworthy test before someone was allowed into the python team while those who were already there were made to undergo the test which they would not expect, and surprisingly for the first time, all of them passed but they had to undergo another test to avoid a repeat of Nick.

Nick was a dangerous man one would not wish to have as an enemy. He was almost the male Venus flytrap but in a negative way. When he tried tapping into Nick's mind after Nick had passed the trustworthy test, he had heard and felt nothing. It was

Nick's gift, he could lie through a lie detector and would not be caught, so he had given him a pass but Jason had told him he just did not trust him. He had to listen to Jason because he could not use his gift on Nick, he wanted to watch Nick's reaction for a year and Jason was right, Nick had joined the enemy to destroy them. He was happy Jason had made sure Nick did not escape. There was the possibility he might meet people like Nick. In fact, when he thought about Nick, he always had the feeling that he had already met one like him, the man behind the downfall of his father. He was never able to read that man, it was not like Ghost. Ghost's mind was like a wall. He had felt a block or better put, he had jammed a block that almost knocked him down. Ghost was a nonreactor, nothing worked on him, alarms would not go off on him. Ghost had become his first failure. No matter how he tried, he could not enter his mind to help him recover his memory of his childhood. There was a time he tried to push away the blockage, he got a little but Ghost was knocked out unconscious while he felt headache for days. That could also explain why Wolf could not sense Ghost. But Nick was different, there was nothing blocking him, it was just blank not silent, but blank like he was not thinking of anything in particular.

He was grateful that someone like Major was their commander because he did not only force them to hone their gifts in a brutal way, he made sure they trained without using their gift. Major believed they might need it. Because of people like Nick, they had decided that each of the Special Force team officer must go through Wolf, Jason and him and must have three yes from all of them. All the twenty five members of the Python unit passed including Stud. Stud was even a special case because not only did Jason not feel she was trouble, Jason had said he trusted her and when he had

asked Jason how much trust, Jason had said he could leave the kids with her and even allow her to take them out and he would be sure Stud would die keeping them safe. He had looked into her mind during the test, the only time he was permitted to do so. She was as Jason described. Her thoughts were all about making it into the Circle unit and being accepted but she had an issue with inferiority complex, she felt she would never be good enough for anything and other things he would rather keep to himself.

Although his mind had wondered away from the scenes on his TV, he saw it. It all happened within seconds, he felt fear within that seconds. Wolf and Pearl had felt the danger and had tried to prevent it but they were too far away from John. Jason was also not close, he had left to meet Lara and Pearl. It was just Al, John and Puppy. John had sensed the danger but he wouldn't have been able to get out of danger on time. The dog dived in time to take the hit of about forty kg iron ball that was going directly at John. Al was on the other side of the masses that were on top a table, she had been trying to lift one of them but it had hit the other one which was opposite John and the ball had rolled off the table, and it was going to hit John who was going to meet Al. The impact would have opened John's skull, although he tried to move away. The mass landed on the dog's legs making him howl in pain from the impact.

There was absolute silence. He must have not been the only one whose breathe had seized within that seconds. Wolf was the first to get to John and the dog. The dog's weight had pushed John from danger, he had fallen and had hit his head on the ground but he did not cry. He was in fact already up trying to push the mass away from the dog. Wolf was just lifting it when others got to the scene. The children were already screaming the dog's name, they started crying when they saw his broken legs.

Jason started writing on a tab, he was sure Jason was sending for the vet they always took puppy to. Wolf placed his hands on puppy's back and started rubbing it. Geoffrey was the only one not crying, even Halima had joined them to cry but the other ladies especially Mena, John's mother were holding their chest, they were trying to recover from the shock. Puppy was a gift from Ghost to Halima to cement their brother sister relationship but Puppy had changed ownership to Pearl, then Wolf, now currently John. Ghost had asked Wolf to try a DNA test with Tega, his brother to find out if they were really related, because it was another mystery in their boxes of mystery, even Jason had gone nowhere in solving why the dog clung to Wolf and his family. But Wolf did not because he was almost a complete replica of his grandpa from his father's side, so there was no question of him being switched at birth. The mystery might never be solved. This dog just saved the life of John, he knew something was about to happen like them but knew Wolf would not get there on time and knew to take the hit for John. John was now screaming his name in children language.

"Hey puppy, just breathe, help is on its way. I owe you a debt I can't repay puppy, thanks. Wolf is grateful puppy" The dog had stopped howling immediately Wolf started talking, he was listening to Wolf. He saw them putting on their transmitter, his phone started blinking, they were all connecting.

"I thought about a million things within that seconds. I never knew someone's heart can literally leap out of the body" Hadiya said.

She was surprisingly the first to speak, others were still silent, even the ones on ground. The children's cry were the only noise.



Suddenly, Al started lifting all the balls on the table and smashing them to the ground, he had never seen her this furious. She was screaming as she easily picked a forty kg mass. That was ten kg short of a bag of cement being lifted by a three year old. Everybody understood because Beast was a bulldozer when pissed off. This was a first for Al and she was lifting weights like nothing. She ran to the forty kg ball that had hit Puppy, she lifted it, took it a bit far away from where the others were gathered around the dog, then hit it on the ground. He saw Beast walking to her.

"Beast don't" he said making Beast to pause.

Al was now lifting the culprit ball for the second time.

"Why?" Beast asked.

"You won't be there to stop her all the time. We need to find out how far she would go Beast. I know you want to hold her and tell her it was not her fault but don't Beast, don't" he answered Beast as Al smashed the last ball on the floor. The cemented ground broke not the ball.

She turned and discovered the ball did not break. She picked one of the balls she had already dropped on the ground, then used it to hit the culprit ball, nothing happened to the ball. She screamed and raced to the gym bicycle which was installed to the ground.

"She will not" Mark said.

But Al did. She lifted the bicycle off the ground, turned with it and stoned it toward the balls.

"What the heck?" Fast said.



"This is unbelievable" Major said.

"Al, it's okay. Sweetheart come to daddy" Beast called her. He could see that Beast was struggling to keep himself from going to her.

"I did not want to hurt John, it was not the ball I was trying to carry, the ball wanted to harm John" Al cried.

"I know sweetheart, we all know."

But Al was not listening. She ran to a bigger bike.

"That is more than a hundred kg of weight. I don't think she will be able to lift it" Major said.

Major was also wrong, she uprooted it from the ground scaring the shit out of him, she was just three. He could see her body at least noticed she was carrying something heavy but her mind was still in rage because she sent it flying towards the balls crashing the bike.

"You won't break" Al shouted at the ball.

She turned round to search for something else. She sighted a hundred and fifty kg weight and started running towards it. Beast ran towards her.

"Beast don't" all the males chorused but Beast did not listen.

He grabbed Al just when she bent down to lift it. Al tried to fight him but Beast held on.

"It's daddy, Al it's dad" Beast said trying to kiss her cheek but she turned away and



started hitting Beast.

"Daddy let me go, I must destroy that ball, let me go" she screamed hitting Beast on his chest but Beast held on.

She started punching him with both hands. She folded it the way Beast taught her how to punch. Beast took the blows but still held on.

"Is okay Al, you can hit daddy, it's okay. It was not your fault princess" Beast said kissing her hair as she screamed and punched him.

"If she doesn't stop now she might injure you Beast, there is just much you can withstand" Doc spoke for the first time.

And she was right, his strength was external not internal, he mostly released force not absorbed. If only Beast had listened.

"I am still trying to understand how the mighty Beast could be so emotionally moved like this. Halima give us back our Beast" Ghost said.

Halima was moving to join Beast but Wolf stopped her.

"Don't, you can't withstand her rage" Wolf said, then went back to holding Puppy who was surrounded by the children, who were also watching Al's rampage.

"It took just a little girl to break through Beast and make him look an emotional wreck, this same Beast people dread" Mark said.

"Beast you did not try at all, you should have allowed her. What if you are not there? We have no idea how far she can go" Major said.



But the main issue of AI punching Beast to get free was still there.

Geoffrey stood up and started going towards Beast and AI, all of them tried to stop him but Pearl intervened.

"No, let him, he is the only one that can calm her" Pearl.

"How will you know?" Jason asked.

He could talk because Cindy was around him.

"Because it has happened many..." Pearl stopped talking.

They started questioning Pearl but he needed to come in.

"Jason give Pearl a transmitter and everybody allow Geoffrey" he said.

They allowed Geoffrey to go to AI. He saw Jason bringing out a transmitter from his small bag on his waist but zoomed the screen to one scene, the main scene. He needed to watch in details what Geoffrey was going to do.

"She is on" Jason said but the others did not let him speak, they attacked Pearl at once.

"I don't understand what the query is for. Must we tell you and connect you to everything new about us?" Pearl countered.

"Yes" Everybody answered.

"How many times are we talking about and what happened?" he asked.

"It was not as bad as this. If it was, I would have contacted you guys, but we can take care of ourselves, give us some credits."



"That's not what I asked..." he stopped talking.

Geoffrey was tapping Al. She turned to hit him but he dodged her. He flipped his fingers at her to come get him. Beast released his hold on her, he had not been talking but he had been listening.

Al ran after Geoffrey, then started throwing punches his way but Geoffrey was very fast at getting out of harm's way. Al continued her assault on Geoffrey but not even a punch touched Geoffrey, he was too calculative and too good.

"Pearl to what end is this?" Beast asked but Pearl did not answer.

But he already knew.

"Searching for an entrance" Jason said before him.

"I don't understand" Ella said.

She was with the children and the dog. Before Jason could explain, it happened. Geoffrey suddenly turned offensive and he was very fast, he saw the split second of Al's distraction and took it. He went straight for her waist and twisted her in a semicircle, then went on the ground with her but there was no force, so there was no harmful impact. Geoffrey held on as Al panted but she was now calm.

"I did not want to hurt John. I love John so much, I don't want the starks to take him anymore, I don't want another one" Al cried but did not rage.

Geoffrey pulled her to him. Al grabbed his neck and started crying. The children ran to join them with George taking Lara with him. John climbed on Al. Al turned and gave



John a bear hug.

"I love you so so much. I don't want you to get hurt. I'm sorry Puppy got hurt, sorry" Al said kissing John's hair.

"Sorry Puppy got hurt, sorry" John repeated what Al said but in children's language.

"You see? John is not angry with you, Puppy is not angry with you. We all know it was the ball's fault and you have already punished the ball" Pearl said rubbing Al's hair.

"But the ball did not break" Al said sniffing, she was no longer crying.

"You injured it cutie, it has scratches" George said holding Al's hand, Lara held the other hand.

They all laid on their back facing the rising sun with Geoffrey and Al both panting.

George still held on to Lara's hand. John was in between George and Al, then Geoffrey, then Pearl.

"Al you are becoming very strong, too strong" George said.

"Will I be able to tear that snake that swallowed that antelope?" Al asked.

"Geoffrey thinks so. If the snake tries to hurt John, you will tear it to pieces" George answered.

"Okay" Al said smiling.

"Is it that they forgot we are around, like just few feet from them? Haba whali" Ghost said.



"Beast Geoffrey knew what to do, he is four years you know?" Wolf said.

Beast did not answer, he would not be able to answer. That was a knock out from Wolf.

They were always like cat and dog, never agreed on anything personal.

"Pearl why did you not tell us?" Major asked.

He knew Major would be more interested in what AI could do but they might have to wait for another provocation because Beast just ruined everything.

"I just did not see why I should tell you that AI had gotten angry when John had fallen on a stool in our underground house.

"The underground house has artificial intelligent birds, I did not see it" Jason said.

"It happened in our free zone" Pearl said.

"Which one is free zone again?" Fast asked.

"Our training field" Pearl said.

"Pearl the birds don't follow your rules, I programmed them" Jason said.

"Well Geoffrey reprogrammed them" Pearl answer.

They were in deep shit, big one. Geoffrey was just four. One big reason none of them should think of having another baby until they could handle so many situations on ground.

"What did AI do?" he asked.

"She pieced the stool and went for another stool but Geoffrey had stopped her and



made her to try punch him. But Geoffrey had dodged and later pulled her down holding her on her waist" Pearl said.

"And you did not deem it fit to tell us Pearl?" Sabrina asked.

"Why should I tell you? We handled it well and fine, better than you guys and Beast" Pearl answered and she was damn right, he even had no idea what to do. No one could even counter her.

"How many other episodes and is it only John?" Major asked.

"No" Pearl answered.

"How many?" Halima asked but the transmitter was off Pearl's ears in a jiffy, the doing of Geoffrey.

"Geoffrey does not want you to tell them, they must not know everything, we are taking care of ourselves fine." George spoke for Geoffrey.

"Did you notice Geoffrey did not talk? He talked that time with the snake but he has not spoken a single word" Cindy lamented.

Jason pulled her to him while Halima ran to join them. She laid down on Lara's side and held Lara's hand. She was the simplest married lady he had ever met. Some could say it was due to her being in captivity for fourteen years but it was not true. Although that was part of the reason she acted like a child most times, it was not the main reason she was so simple. It was inborn in her. She had the mind of a child, almost like the biblical child Jesus had instructed his followers to behave like. She was easily pleased, listened when important. She was making life so easy for Beast, a perfect match for someone



like Beast who had always been out of control even to his late mum, although it was what he believed to be for her favor.

"I know all of you can hear me. Stop asking me, ask Geoffrey. I don't want to quarrel with my siblings. We can take care of ourselves very well, better than you adults" Pearl said.

"I am right now more concerned about how far AI can go when she is pissed off like this. Beast you started manifesting at ten and even at that, you could barely lift an axe according to what you told us" Major said.

"I have nothing to say Major, I am still dumfounded. We may need to go back to Nnamdi" Beast answered.

Nnamdi was the oldest man in Beast clan, he was over ninety five years. Beast had to trace someone who might be able to tell him more about the hunter's family after AI's strength started manifesting. They had at first thought the trait would not follow AI because she was female but they were wrong. They had at first contacted Ibe, the man who had exposed Beast to Ojogolo. The man had thought Beast wanted to kill him but felt relaxed when Beast told him he and his friends just wanted to find out more of what he knew. He had said a lot but could not go further than his great great grandfather. Ibe had later referred them to old Nnamdi after Jason had taken over his wife's health bills. Nnamdi was able to tell them up to his great great great grandfather and they were also hunters and they had only males, no females and died at a ripe age. He was surprised when he was told they now had the first female. He had asked to see her and he had watched what she could already do. That was a year ago.



Nnamdi could not tell them about the first hunter because his own father met them as hunters. Nnamdi who was in Iseluku, Delta State had said he still believed Beast's uncle was not Beast's grandfather's son. This made Beast to track down his uncle and he had confessed that his mother had ran away after the death of his grandfather for same reason. He begged Beast to forgive him for trying to take over the land that was never his. So at the end, Nnamdi was right that the hunter's family only gave birth to one child from one woman. He also confirmed their very hot temperament but according to him, there was no record of any of them hitting their wives. Nnamdi said it was as if their wives were sculpted specifically for them, to tame them. He also said that from what he knew and from what he had seen before he left Asaba, their children started hunting with them as early as nine. This made him to believe that Beast's strength did not show forth early because he was the first to be raised without a coach. His father had died when he was just four and he had been at first raised by a stepfather who assaulted him all the time, but his strength came to life when his step-father had transferred his aggression to his mother. Al did not just have Beast but was surrounded with extremely gifted people.

Another thing that had gotten him thinking about the reason Beast became the first to have a female must be Halima. The males needed their wives to calm them down but Halima was one in a million, literally. She could give Beast a female because she could transfer her trait to the child. Al combined both Halima's light and Beast's darkness and from what he just watched, she was in control throughout her rampage, there was still a sense of reality holding her down. She had made sure to take the ball to where it would be safe from the children before attacking it. The trait must have come

from Halima, this was because he had seen Beast go rampage many times and it always took time before he came back to reality until Halima. He needed to explain this to them.

"AI is like this because there is nothing stalling her strength from manifesting and she is also faster than all the other hunters in Beast's family because we are already calling out her strength, even before she could walk, Jason had always stirred it up. That plus the fact that she has so many coaches is enough to make her like this" he explained.

He heard Beast's heavy sigh of relief.

"Thanks buddy, thought it could be because she is female" Beast said.

"I agree with Wild, and I also believe there is nothing much to worry about, just that Jason needs to change the training method. She is more in grasp with reality than her dad when on rampage" Major said.

Major's brain was a machine, he was the dictionary itself, he could pick apart someone's talent and fix it back to function properly.

"The vet's around" Jason said.

He changed the screen to capture the five viewpoints.

Wolf raised Puppy with the help of Ella and Mena who placed their hands under its broken legs. Puppy howled in pains as they carried it to the car of the vet. The children were now on their feet, they ran after the dog.

"Mena, calm down. Even though I am looking at you through the screen, I can see your

body is still in shock. It is over, John is safe Mena" he said.

"Thanks Wild" Mena replied but she was still in shock.

"Imagine discussing everything minus the most important issue. Fast are you not disappointed?" Ghost asked.

"I am not, it is still a simple issue just that isi ewu is now two" Fast said.

"Four" Major surprisingly said.

"Four head of goats for one person?" Cindy asked.

"Major they don't understand you, should I tell them?" Ghost asked.

"Ahmed you can't be serious, you have now joined them" Hadiya said laughing.

"I hope it is not what I'm thinking?" he asked and all of them started laughing.

The car was already out of the compound with Wolf following the vet after making enough promises that Puppy would be fine. Although Puppy might need to stay some weeks before he would be able to stand on the broken legs. Weeks because Siberian huskies healed fast.

"Oh my gosh, like seriously?" Doc said.

"You guys are thinking too far" Mark said.

"It is better to plan ahead. Wild I will be the one to receive the isi ewu for Lara on behalf of Mentor" Major said.

They started laughing.



"So it was what I was thinking. George is just trying to show love to Lara, he is trying to make her feel welcomed. Ella will understand" he said.

"I don't understand o" Ella shouted.

The laughter increased.

Beast raised Al and John with Halima holding his waist and resting on his side.

"Puppy is a hero Al, she will be fine okay?" Beast said kissing Al's cheek.

Al nodded.

"Thank you Geoffrey, you are the main man" Ghost said to Geoffrey and he just smiled.

"Dad we are going inside, we are behind schedule" George said to Jason. He was holding his brother and Lara's hand.

He slowly released Lara's hand almost like he did not want to.

"We are coming, just want to do some computer stuff before food and bath time"

George explained to Lara.

She nodded and the laughter started again after George had gone inside with Geoffrey.

Pearl held Lara's hand as they walked towards Wolf's house.

"Pearl wait, I want to follow you. I don't want to be late at the underground house" Al shouted.

Beast placed John and Al on the ground and she ran after Pearl and Lara. Beast pulled Halima to him.



"What a day" Mena sighed carrying John and also walking behind Pearl.

"But Geoffrey did not talk" Ella said.

"I was thinking he was going to talk but it's like only snake swallowing an antelope will work" Ghost said.

He disconnected from the app, then sent Jason a text to still hold on with sending flights gadgets to Cloud's arena. As he went to take a shower, he kept thinking of two things, AI's protective traits and Geoffrey's ability to know exactly what to do to calm AI even when the adults were lost on what to do. The children kept teaching them serious lessons, even Pearl had asked a question nobody could answer. Later in the night, he would find out what game plan Cloud had but he was not yet sure which card to play. Unlike Pearl, he did not know which to tell Bella and which to keep to himself when he would meet her. Time would tell and he could not just wait.

The hours it took before night came were like ages but at last it was time to make the first deal with Cloud and he was fully prepared. He knew he was not the only one fully prepared when he entered the Club, when he sighted Olisa and saw his imagination of how he was going to join Cloud to slaughter him but Olisa had nodded like nothing was wrong and had escorted him to the meeting room where the others were waiting. Roy was more than ready because he had bugged Bella's bag and had also trained Bella on plan A and plan B even up to plan C and the worst part was Bella. She was angry and afraid of him, she saw him as a beast and only agreed because Cloud promised her a lot of dopes. She was ready to bring him down at all cost after what he had done to her friend and she had completely forgotten that he could read her

mind and communicate with her. Her mind was clouded by her fear because of the state she had met Amara at the hospital. From what he could read from Bella, Roy had not only prepared her to take him to a state of no return then resist him. They had trained her to make him rape her, the video was going to be used to blackmail him or else they would publish it on social media. From Roy's mind, he was thinking of how he would feel when they must have published it on social media after they had gotten what they wanted. Bella did not mind being raped as long as Cloud kept to the deal of increasing her cocaine insufflating to four times a day. She was braving herself for the worse that could happen, she was also seeing it that she was doing it for Amara, the effect of Cloud and Olisa's brainwashing. This was somehow not good because she had automatically made herself a suspect.

He had wanted to connect to her but paused. Pearl was right, they were not supposed to know everything. Just like Geoffrey he knew exactly what to do, he was ready to play his next card.

CHAPTER FIFTEEN

(When dreams and reality connect.....)

She had wished the time would run slowly but it ran fast and in a jiffy, it was



night. It was time to meet her doom. There were rewards waiting for her if she survived but the problem was 'if she survived.' The guy was huge and wild in his behavior and Roy had trained her to make him rape her after she had activated the cameras. They wanted to try tame the wild creature before they killed him but the thought of him dying was making her fear. She just could not understand herself, she was fearing for him, someone who had no emotions, but there was the part where she was forgetting something about him. Her mind was so much in shambles that she could not fathom what she should remember. They were already in Cloud's business and meeting room, that was after Cloud had made it possible Roy's plan would work. He had raped her after they got back from the hospital, then six more times after that. She was so sore that she could barely walk. There was no way she would be able to endure his invasion. Cloud had said that would enable her to remember to resist him. The only force driving her at the moment was the fact that Cloud had already shown her the numerous dopes waiting for her after she must have succeeded, that was if she survived.

'Worst case scenario, I will be admitted like Amara, I will recover. I will not even feel much pains because my dopes will take me away from reality' she thought.

But her fear turned to panic when he walked into the room with two boxes. She might not survive the night, she shouldn't have agreed, there was no point if she was going to die. Not that her refusal to go would have changed anything.

He started talking with Cloud but she was not listening, she was carried away with the thoughts of how she was going to survive the night. Cloud said something that caught her attention.



"I saw what you did to Amara, although you might feel you had the right, I want to warn you that you have no right to put any scratch on Bella. I don't give a f*ck whether you want to go wild or not, but don't go wild with Bella" Cloud warned.

Wild did not reply, he just nodded in agreement. She saw Olisa struggling to restrain his hands from cocking his gun, even Cloud was shaking with anger. It had never happened, ever since Cloud held her hostage, she had never slept with anyone else. This was the first and she could see Cloud wanted to rip Wild apart but was holding himself because of the plan. The question that kept popping in her mind which Cloud could not even answer was what if the plan failed? She was sure she could make him rape her but she was not sure he would trust Cloud and he would not search her for a bug. Then she remembered Roy had given her plan B. There were some that would only be active when she activated it and if she forgot or could not activate it, Roy would activate it himself. Two of them where positioned at places Wild would never think of looking. Cloud stood up.

"I leave before you leave because if it's the other way round, you won't survive this night" Cloud said.

She could see how much restrain he was forcing his body to observe because his veins were visible.

Olisa carried the boxes and nodded to Roy. They left and it was just the two of them. She became afraid when he looked at her with lust filled eyes, like a huge animal in heat. She felt like running after Cloud because at the moment, Cloud was the lesser evil, Cloud had never whipped her the way this man destroyed Amara.

He did not say any word to her. He stood up and held her hands. She shook as they walked outside to his jeep. He took her to the front seat, opened it and made her enter inside. He shut the door making her jerk from fear.

He entered the driver's seat and started driving. He did not say a single word, even after he had opened the gate with a remote, even after he had made her to climb down from the jeep, even after he had held her hand and taken her with him to the door of his lodge and even after he had entered his house with her. He was yet to say anything to her.

The button camera on her blouse was active, even the one on her bag. She should start work immediately, she should turn round to give Roy a view of the room. Roy must be watching what was happening, she would not be surprised if Cloud was also watching. They would be worried about the fact that he had not spoken. She found her will amidst her fears and spun round.

"Wow, you have a nice parlor" she said but her voice betrayed her.

She wished she could compose herself. Wild did not reply her, instead, he sat down on one of the couches in the parlor. He kept looking at her. Roy would be having a clear view of him because she was facing him with the camera on her blouse. She thought of what to say or do. She could not decide if she should join him on his seat and seduce him there or if she should strip slowly. Amara had used the latter tactics and it did not work. She chose the first option but he spoke before she could even move a foot.

"Nice try Cloud. Two cameras looking straight at me positioned on her blouse, one on her hair band, one on her bag and one on her hand band with audio from the one on her

hand band. I guess you still believe Nigerian soldiers know nothing about technology. This is one of the simplest training in my unit. We can detect a bug without using a bug detector. I keep telling you to at least give us some credits. I'm pissed this is what you can come up with" Wild said.

She looked at him with her mouth opened, she had no idea what to do.

"Pull it off, every damn camera I just pointed out."

She was doing it even before he finished. The command in his voice was scaring the shit out of her. She was done in less than a minute. Wild did not know that they had actually given him credit after what Tayo had said about his team, he did not know Roy had counted on him identifying the cameras. That was the reason for plan B. That would be in action later but at the moment, no one was watching, no one was listening.

He stood up, grabbed her shaking hand and led her to a large room after taking her bag and throwing it on one of the couches in the parlor.

The bed was gigantic, large enough to take three of Wild. She had been made to put on a coat which had a camera in its breast pocket. She was supposed to hang it where Roy could get a clear view. She pulled it off and turned to find somewhere to hang it but Wild came and took it away from her. He left the room and came back without the coat. Plan C then.

She stood by the door waiting for him to be the first to make the first move but he did not. He sat down on the only couch in the room and started looking at her like he was studying her. Something flashed through her mind but before she could grasp it, it

disappeared.

"Are there any bug I should know about?" he asked, his baritone sounded in her chest.

She shook her head. There was no way he would be able to detect plan C and it would not be activated until he was at the peak of pleasure, until she would start to resist him.

"What of the ring on your finger?"

Her hand automatically rubbed the ring on her left index finger. There was nothing on earth that would make her pull off that ring, even the threat of death would not. Cloud had told her to remove it that first time he had raped her to his satisfaction but she had told him she would rather be dead and if he forcefully removed it, she would fight him with her last breath and would not mind dying in the process.

From that day she had woken up in a hut with a ring as a necklace, Papa had told her never to let the ring out of her body no matter what. She had asked him why and he had said he would lead her to the right person at the right time and it would never happen if that ring was out of her body. He had also said it was her late Mama's ring and it was meant for luck but that had changed after Papa had confessed on his death bed that he was not her real father. If only she had stayed to listen. The ring was the only clue to her past. She had tried interpreting his words after his burial and it became clear. Whoever she was, the ring was the only connection to her past and her family or someone would find her with that ring. It was customized, there were two letters on it, O then a love symbol after which a B. She had removed the ring from her neck because the rope was getting too fragile, it could fit her big fingers, then later her index fingers and it had remained there. When Cloud had asked for an explanation, she had told him it

belonged to her late mother. She did not care if she was lying because she did not know if she was even saying the truth, if Papa had said the truth. Cloud had looked at her face and had nodded. He never asked again and he never told her to remove it. Although the ring had not worked because she was yet to be found by her family, that was if they were still alive.

"The ring is clean and I'm not taking it off, even Cloud could not make me" she declared and hoped Wild saw the determination on her face.

He stood up and walked to her. He held her left hand and inspected the ring, she waited, hoping it would not get to fighting him to keep the ring on her finger.

"What does O and B stand for?"

"My parents" she answered.

She was not going to start explaining her past to him, a complete stranger. He looked at her, then back at the ring.

"Tell me about yourself."

"I am not obligated to tell you, I was told to pleasure you this night, please can we stick to that?"

She was still afraid of him, but there was a fierceness that filled her up anytime the ring and her past became a point of discussion. He looked at her, took her hand and pulled her to the giant bed. She would have to climb it but he did not let her climb, he lifted her up holding her waist. The arousal was instant, all her body felt inflamed with a sudden lust. She wanted his hands back immediately he released her. He joined her



on the bed and pulled her immediately to him and placed her in-between his legs saving her the embarrassment of being the one to go back to him, because she was going to, his touch was like shooting a dope. She felt her body clinging to him, pushing back to get more heat, she did not resist, it was intoxicating. She did not care if she was supposed to fear him, she was not ready to miss a pleasure she had never experienced. He obliged her and wrapped her with his big hands. The feeling was like the heat one got from getting wrapped up with a thick blanket on a very cold night, only it was hundred times better.

"Tell me about yourself" but his voice was husky and his manhood was swollen. It was enough to frighten her but she liked it, she just liked the feeling, she had never felt like that before.

"Why do you want to know?" she asked pushing further into that warmth. He held her closer. She found herself turning her head sideways and resting her cheek on his muscled chest. Her fear instantly disappeared, instead she felt safe. Not only did she feel safe, she also felt she was forgetting something.

"I don't just want to know Bella, I care to know."

That name again. It made her raise her head to look at him. Then she remembered, she just did not understand why she forgot who he was, how he could read her mind, how he must have already known about all Cloud and Roy's plan even the Plan C. There was no way she would have forgotten except he had made her to forget.

"Did you do that?" she asked.



"Do what?"

"Did you make me to forget what you can do?"

"No, it was your fears but then I decided I should go along with it."

"You can't do that, okay you can do that but you should not do that, it's wrong. It scares the shit out of me to know someone can do that to me" she shouted all fears forgotten.

"I have never done that to you before, but desperate times calls for desperate measures."

"What do you mean you have never...."

She paused, she remembered he had told her Bella was her real name.

"Do you know me, like know me from when I was little?"

He nodded making her heart leap with excitement. It was not possible, she must be dreaming, she had been lost for twenty two years. There was no way someone who knew her would just find her.

"You are not my brother, not my father" she said.

He just stared at her.

"You say my real name is Bella?"

He nodded.

"Who were you to me when I was little?" That was not what she wanted to ask but she did not know how to put it. He did not answer.



"There is something I want to do first Bella, you remembering is not important now" he said raising the hand with the ring.

"What do you mean by that? I have lost my memory since I was eight, that is twenty two years ago. What the fuck do you mean by me knowing my past is not important now?" she shouted.

"When you were six Bella not eight" he said.

That made her to pause. So she was twenty seven not twenty nine.

"Please tell me? You really know me, you came for me right?"

She turned to face him, she held his shoulders.

"Please I'm dying to know about my past, please."

"But you don't want to tell me about yourself."

"I am all in, just tell me what you know."

She started pushing close to him, her knee hit his hardness making him to groan, the sound set her on fire and before she could claim his lips, he had already done it.

She was going to take it as her first kiss, because she was experiencing how a kiss felt like for the first time. She felt consumed by him. She pushed her body further to him and jerked when his hands grazed her breast. She wanted her clothes off but he suddenly stopped.

"No" she protested.



Call her crazy but there was no way she was going to pretend she was not burning, she might experience her first ever pleasure. She was not going to let the opportunity pass her.

“Sssh, Bella I can’t, not now?”

“What do you mean by that? I can feel your lust?”

He did not answer. He held the ring hand and started pulling the ring off bringing her senses half back.

“No, I...”

“Sssh it’s temporal. I will put it back.”

She stopped resisting, she believed him. He pulled off the ring and put it in his pocket. Then he started removing her earrings which was Roy’s plan C.

“How much do you know?” she asked as he pulled off the second one.

“More than you can imagine.”

“Can you control them like me?”

“No.”

He did not elaborate. He gently pulled her away from him and left the room. She felt cold, she wanted him back immediately. She did not allow his full body to touch the bed before she threw herself against him. He used one hand to hold her and used the other to hold a laptop and a paper he had come back with.



"Wait, are you controlling my emotions now? Why am I clinging to you?" she asked as he switched on the laptop.

"Surprisingly, that is one thing I cannot control about you. I can send waves but I cannot control and I'm not even sending waves. It's all you Bella."

"And you won't tell me about my past, about when I was Bella. I am trying to but I cannot remember anything, I can't remember being called by that name."

He did not reply. He was concentrating on what he was doing with his wrist watch and the laptop. That was same wrist watch Roy could not detect. It was a fucking android wrist watch.

"How? How did you activate it, or is it not same wrist watch?"

"It's a secret Bella."

"Stop calling me that name if you are not going to tell me about it" she shouted.

He turned and looked at her.

"Not too long ago you were shaking because you were afraid of me but I can't even sense an atom of fear from you. You should fear me Bella."

But she could not, she also did not have an answer to his question, her body stopped fearing him the moment her cheek touched his chest, even her mind was not afraid.

"But I'm not afraid, maybe because my body and mind knows you will never hurt me and somehow I have the feeling you came for me and there is the fact that you know me more than I know myself which you don't want to tell me" she shouted.



"I will but first you must do something."

"What's that?"

"Officially marry me."

That took her by surprise, she was even too shocked to answer.

"Although I don't really need it, by tradition you are mine but I want to make it undisputed" he said bringing out her ring and another ring. It was then she saw what the paper meant. It was a marriage certificate already signed by witnesses.

"Bella Omolara Adeola. Olanipkekun Adedeju Moses Adeola" she read out loud and gasped dropping the certificate.

"Dreams of a guardian, a little girl that looked like.." she paused.

She could not ruin the moment by talking about her daughter, she felt the pains of remembering her but there was an important issue that needed immediate attention.

"Are you him? Am I the little girl? The daughter of a bicycle repairer, a guardian by name Ola and his father is the exact replica of you. Are you the guardian from my dreams? Did that marriage, that child marriage really happen? Is the little girl me?"

CHAPTER SIXTEEN

(Then light finally came but....)



Edit with WPS Office

He stared at her. She felt him in her mind, she had no idea what he was doing but she could swear he was exploring her memory about her dreams. She felt empty the moment he left.

"When did you start having the dreams?"

"After my..." she paused.

She did not want to talk about Lara, she did not want to start crying. She could do that later. It just even dawned on her that she gave her daughter her name, that was if she was really the little girl in her dream. Then she remembered he could read her, she did not want him to question her about her daughter. She was grateful when he did not, when he pretended he did not know.

"I know you want answers Bella but this is not the right time, you have to trust me and just follow my lead."

She did not need his answers, she just knew she was the girl in her dream, there was no way it was coincidence, but she was sad, even with the dreams, she could not remember anything. She gasped.

"The ring" she said snatching her ring from his hands.

She turned it.

"O loves B, Ola loves Bella. It's real, that child marriage is real. You made this ring for me?"

"Bella we are running out of time."



"At least f*cking answer me this one, I know you are trying to protect me, I know the shit about the less I know the safer but please tell me, please."

He nodded.

"But why can't I remember?" she cried.

"Why can't I remember you? I am supposed to remember when I meet someone I know yet it's just the dreams, why? I want to remember" she cried.

He pulled her closer to him and kissed her forehead.

"I promise to make you remember Bella but you need to trust me. There is something I must do" he said.

She pulled away and looked at him. She had nothing to lose and she was absolutely sure he knew her. Even though she could not remember anything, she could still remember her dreams and the man before her was exactly like that huge man who a young boy protected her from, and the huge man was the young boy's father. She nodded, her body said yes, her mind said yes, who was she to say no? This was the light at the end of the tunnel she had been looking for, the light she had lost hope searching for.

He started playing a video on the system. He paused it and turn to her.

"This is the minister who has his signature on the certificate, just answer the normal question, then you sign and we are married."

"This is crazy, out of this world and wild" she said.



"That is me" he answered.

She looked at him.

"I am going to believe everything in my dreams were my past and if that's true, I don't think what I'm about to do now will be crazier than what I have dreamt about" she said.

He did not reply he just played the video, it was not life, it was pre-recorded. The minister asked if she would marry Ola. She said yes. Wild told her to place her thumb on a part of his big wrist watch.

"What does it mean?" she asked as she placed her thumb on it.

"That's your yes"

He did that for every yes she said, Wild answered yes but did. not make a finger print out of it. The minister joined them together.

"What God has joined together, let no man put asunder" the minister said and Wild stopped the video. He placed the laptop on a table near the edge of the bed. He brought out a biro, he signed on the certificate and gave her to sign, she also signed on it. He fixed back her ring on the wedding finger then made her fix his.

"You can fix it back to the index finger later" he said.

It was only when he had placed the certificate on the table that she remembered Cloud.

But her thoughts were forgotten when he claimed her lips. He did not only claim her lips but she felt him in her mind.



'There is something I want to try out. I have a feeling it will work, so I am going to remain here throughout' she heard his voice in her mind.

'Okay' she replied using same method like she was more than used to it.

'Yes you are, we could go a day without speaking aloud' he answered her thought.

Before she could respond to that revelation, he was already pulling off her blouse. She got lost to the sensation and helped him remove her clothes off her body.

She could feel his animalistic lust, she could almost hear what he was thinking, he wanted to take her immediately but he was not, he was taking his time torturing her, devouring her body from her neck, adoring her body, making her burn and beg for him to take her. She was grateful when he allowed her to pull of his black T-shirt and could not wait for his remaining clothing to be off his body. She closed her eyes as the pleasure became unbearable, just when she felt she would die from the sensation of him devouring her body with his mouth, she felt him inside her. Suddenly, she felt sparks of shockwaves, she could almost see it even though her eyes were closed. The sensation was like getting shocked by a leaked current, it was too much. She tried to get away but she felt him more in her mind. He opened up his mind for her to see he was feeling the same way.

'Hold on Bella, it worked, it will pass' he heard her.

But it was not passing, it was increasing, he remained still and held her down.

'There is a Chinese belief that a red invisible thread connects some special people who are meant to be together. No matter how far they are apart it always lead them back



together, but for us it is now visible, see it Bella'

She saw it, very tiny threadlike sparks of waves eating its way from Wild to her, it was what was causing the electric shock almost like it was permanently installing itself to her but it was too pleasurable and painful.

'Is this real or am I dreaming? How do I explain this to my mind?' she replied.

'I have stopped trying to explain this mystery to myself' he replied.

The sensation stopped and almost immediately a new sensation took over.

She woke up on top of Wild. He was not sleeping, he was massaging her head and staring at her. She responded to the soothing relief and grabbed his neck. She felt him getting aroused but same time, he pulled her away.

"No" she protested.

"It's 5:30 AM Bella, your deadline is 6:AM. You need to go back. I won't stop if we start anything."

"No, I can't go back, I don't want to leave this warmth, please, you are more addictive than my drugs. I don't even feel like having one right now. I know you came for me, you are a soldier, call for backup and take me out" she pleaded.

"I can't Bella, until I can...." He paused and pulled her up.

"No please don't do this, how can you even allow me go back to Cloud. I'm your wife, I can't bear his touch, you..."



She paused, she should have noticed it earlier, he was struggling. He did not want her to go but there was something making him send her away.

"If you pressure me further, I might just listen to you and face the war that Cloud will bring but many captives will never be freed Bella. Many traffickers will never be caught. Do you know why I whipped Amara?"

She shook her head.

"She is responsible for the missing daughter of her neighbor. She had even watched her being raped. That girl is now a sex slave. The state you saw Amara is paradise for some of these sex slaves. Some are raped by three men as the fourth whips them. Don't even ask me how that is possible because you don't want to know."

"I know" she stammered shaking her head from the image of one she had witnessed.

'Allow me' Wild said to her head.

She shook her head, it was a memory she never wanted to remember.

'You have to, you can become the key to rescuing them. I will help you not to feel horror from it.'

She nodded. She started thinking about that event.

'No, don't think, I already have it, think of something else, I will continue from the opening.'

But she had already started thinking about it, there was no going back. Cloud had been offended with her, she could not even remember the crime she had committed but



Cloud had dragged her to his car and drove for hours. His regular securities were with him. If they were not in same car as Cloud, they were in another car.

Cloud blindfolded her and took her to a room. He opened the blindfold. She had been appalled by what she saw. It was a door but glass.

"They can't see us, we can see them. This is the VIP area, there are three of it. The fourth room is big and have about a hundred seats for regulars. Regulars pay seventy thousand to watch the show why VIP's pay two hundred thousand" Cloud said.

She turned and saw Olisa with Aboy seating behind Cloud.

"The show is about to begin" Cloud said forcing her to look at the glass door.

"You need to see what I wanted to do with you. The first time I got the report that Ade has been found and he has a pretty girlfriend and a baby, I had already concluded on sending you here and selling your baby. I know people will pay to not only watch but to participate, but I changed my mind because you gave me pleasures during my first taste of you. Watch and tell me which one you prefer" Cloud continued.

There were four men in the room, she could see from the glass door. A girl was naked, she was on her knees. Her hands where stretched by a chain which was hanging on the wall, it was same thing with her legs. The men stripped and soon they too were naked. One picked a whip and started whipping the girl on her buttocks, then her back, then her breast, she screamed and begged them but it was as if her screams were getting them aroused. He whipped her till blood started falling to the ground. One of the men forced her to give him a blow job while the others started raping her and biting her

nipples, one raped her through her anus. From her body movement, she could see she was in pain but she was not able to scream. The one with the whip started whipping her sides making her jerk with pain. All the men where grabbing her hair with force, she watched in horror as they repeatedly switched turns. She tried to close her eyes but Cloud hit her. She was crying and was relieved when the men finished with her but they were not through, they picked a bottle from the ground, the reason she could not drink a bottle of coca cola. She started begging Cloud as the girl screamed when the bottle was forced through her anus as the man who was whipping her started raping her. She tried to look away but Cloud did not only hit her, he told the others to excuse them, then he ripped off her clothes and raped her as they raped the girl.....

'Bella, I told you not to think about it' she heard Wild's baritone but angry voice bringing her back to reality.

She discovered she was shaking and cold. She immediately felt warmth. Wild had wrapped her in him.

"I can remove the memory Bella."

"No don't please. I want to keep it."

"Why?"

She grabbed Wild.

"Please, I heard about the exploits of your team. Please call your team, that girl is one out of hundreds, you can save her that is if she is still alive. That was almost three years ago. Please" she cried.



"Exactly Bella, same reason I cannot allow a war now. I need to trace all of them. I also need to know his business partners."

"You knew? Cloud is very secretive."

"We got an Intel but you were also declared a suspect by the Special Force Soldiers who escaped. They had even seen you hitting your daughter in your compound."

She started crying.

"Please not now, don't ask me about Lara, please Wild please" she cried.

"Is okay Bella, that is why I came. I knew you were being held against your will even though outsiders will never know, I know my Bella will never involve herself with this evil and I just knew something was wrong.

"My daughter is dead, Cloud's enemy killed her. I did not show..."

The horn of a car made her stop. Olisa had come to pick her.

"He is here" she said.

"I know but you are not going back."

"What now?"

"I know I can't start a war but I can't let you go back. I will find another way to get the documents on those he had trafficked."

"How?"

"I am taking you as a witness."



"You miss the part where Cloud would burn Nigeria down to get me back."

"Normally, we don't arrest but I will make Cloud an exemption, I will make sure he stays alive and get everything I need from his memory."

"I thought you said it only works on me."

"There is a way I can make it work on him. I heard he has where he stores his document. I have never heard him think about the files used in his transaction but...."

"No you can't Wild, his men are too many and you are just one man."

"You don't need to worry about that."

"No you don't understand, I can help."

"No I am taking you as a witness."

The horn blew again.

"You are not getting me, even though you arrest him you cannot recover all, he won't be able to remember all. I am hundred percent sure about fifty will be missing."

"How?"

She showed him. Cloud was expecting a delivery of slaves in few days' time and the way he carried out his transactions were always complex, because no one trusted anyone. At the moment, even Cloud did not know the route they would take and the exact location of the transaction. Starting a war was not even hundred percent sure of success because there was a possibility Cloud would not be captured alive, there was



also Roy because some were done by Roy and Olisa or Aboy. And the way they worked was unique. If Cloud died, the slaves would be taken to another buyer. She wanted them free, especially the new ones who were yet to fully experience the horror of being a sex slave. Boys were not exempted. She made sure she gave him all the information he needed. Before he pulled out, she felt him still struggling.

"The wildness in me cannot let you go back, I can't let him touch you, this is the most difficult decision I've ever made" he said sitting down on the bed his hands on his head.

She could not believe she had actually left after kissing him like it might be her last. He was even holding on to her and she had pulled away, she had left safety. She had been offered more than safety but she was entering into danger. She never knew a time like this would come and she never knew she would chose danger but she had to, it was not a hearsay, she had witnessed it herself, and she knew many were going through worse and many were about to.

Just as she was hoping to be rescued and got help, she had just become hundreds only hope of being rescued and she would do anything to end Cloud, to save those girls. She would never have peace if she took the easy way out. She could not protect Lara but she was going to protect them even at the cost of her life. For the first time in twenty two years, she felt relevant, she felt a direction. As she walked towards the car with Olisa on the wheel, she remembered she had just failed in her mission and she was in trouble. She felt like running back but forced herself to open the car door because for the first time, she knew she was not alone. Even though she still could not remember, she knew her guardian was back. She remembered her dream about Ojo, she

remembered what her guardian did to them, there was that confidence that no matter what happened her guardian would break and tear down walls to get to her.

CHAPTER SEVENTEEN

(The wildness is overtaking the normal...)

He was having a taste of what hell on earth felt like. Every single pain he had endured from his brutal father, every single pain and hunger he had endured for three years running for his life, running from the three kingpins who were determined to kill him, all could not be compared to the torment he was feeling. He had just let Bella go back to Cloud. The thought alone was making him rage with madness. He would have never listened to her if she did not mention the fifty people on their way to being sold as slaves. That got to him. He could not believe Bella was stronger than him.

He had finally tried it out and it had worked. The feeling of being inside Bella was ten times more than what he had sensed from others. Then that electrified connection, if only she knew he had taken more of the brunt, he was sure it would have knocked her out if he had allowed her to experience the full sensation. He could still sense her even when it was already fifteen minutes since she left. He just knew that connection would never again be broken by distance. He did not care about the mystery behind it. All he knew was that it worked and he could find Bella anywhere unlike the past twenty two years, then more than twenty one years searching for her. When he had

not found her where he had hidden her, he had first ran for his life, then, he did not know he could take over one's mind whenever they targeted him with the aim to kill. He had ran for his life because he knew he could not fight off the numbers of people on his tail. He knew she was still alive, there was a feeling that she was still alive, although there was a part of him that doubted it, he held on to that other feeling of her being alive.

He did not want to go searching for her at that moment because he felt he might expose her to danger. He just knew she was somewhere safe and searching for her would put her in danger and so he had ran far away from Lagos but he was still surprised that the three kingpins were still using the slave message method to search for him. It meant they had a picture of him which was being passed from one criminal to another with a monetary value attached to it. In slave message, enmity was usually put outside, that was when the peace symbol was attached to it. The peace symbol was the sketch of a dove. So no matter where he ran to, he was always attacked but most times, he was out of the way before the attackers could get to him. He felt he had mastered how to escape them after a year of hiding. He sneaked back and started searching for her with no particular direction, just studying people to find out if someone saw her but one year was too long and no one was thinking about Bella. He had felt pain and hopelessness and hurt and pissed off but also helpless, he was just one man.

He had been so filled with grief one of the days that he did not notice someone had tracked him and was about to shoot him. By the time he realized the danger, it was too late to run because he would be surrounded by others. Within that split second before the bullet was released, his mind reacted almost on its own. He saw himself seizing control of the man's mind and sending the gun towards another

direction. The bullet was fired but did not get to him. He felt the man's pain and horror from his invasion, he tried something else. He forced the man to shoot himself and it had worked. It was horrific to even him. He had ran far away to recover from the shock of what he could do. He made sure he travelled far north, to thick villages where the slave message would not easily find its way to him, there he practiced how to fight, there he recalled the brutal trainings his father had forced him to go through. There was no gun to practice with but there was no way he was going to forget how to use a gun. After a year, he had travelled to a more civilized area but still lived apart from people, then six months later, he had moved to a more civilized town. That was his first encounter with Major.

Major was on a mission to stop some group of bandits who were kidnapping girls from the village, probably for child marriage, he had read his mind and it was just so complex because Major could think of more than a hundred things at a time making it impossible to understand him. There was a family that used to give him food, not for any reason but their kindness. He did not disturb them by asking to sleep with them, he was okay with the small abandoned hut he was living in. He had visited them as usual in the morning and had seen Major fighting with the bandits who were there to kidnap Amina, their thirteen year old daughter. He had joined Major to try fight up to twenty five bandits with nothing but a cutlass he normally used to help clear their surrounding for them. But he never used it because it happened again. As soon as one of them directed his machete towards him with the aim to kill him with one blow, he seized his mind and forced him to hit his chest. The others had been horrified by what happened that Major ended them within seconds using their distraction. Major was very good, too good. He

did not even know he was a soldier until he had thought about recruiting him. He ran away, he was never going to join any armed forces nor the police, he even had police officers on his death ledger.

Six months later which was three years since the invasion, he came back. He was seventeen then. He first tried to look for Bella but there was no sign of her. He had a mission which was to give justice for his mother and to punish those who took away his right to kill his father. It was simple, all he needed to do was to get in the line of one of their men who would try to kill him, but would end up committing suicide. He made sure he stored the numbers of the dead in his head. He had sighted Papa Ufuoma, his son should be four years then, he was working in a mechanic shop. He used to serve drinks to his father. He had wanted to show himself to him, his reaction would determine if he was part of the crew that betrayed his father because it did not make sense that he was still alive. But he changed his mind because Papa Ufuoma was thinking of running back to Warri, Delta State because even though Abiade did not see him as someone worth killing, he felt he needed to start afresh, he wished Koko Abiade had left the woman alone, that was his mum. He had withdrawn, there was no need showing himself, the man was innocent and he had gotten the name of the man behind his father's downfall, the man whose thoughts were blank, but after experiencing Nick, he understood Abiade's thoughts were actually not blank but that was his gift. He was even his father's right hand man. He just did not understand what else he needed. Okay he was now a kingpin. That was the reason he had murdered every single person that was found in his father's self-proclaimed palace, the reason he could not spare his mum. He started hunting them one by one or rather they were the ones who tried to hunt him and



committed suicide but he needed to give people an hint, he needed to make every single one of them to have sleepless nights. He wanted to tell them he was alive and back for revenge and to get justice. He made sure he dropped a note after they died. He had written 'you could have left my mum' on the notes and soon he heard whispers about him.

The kingpins had increased their security but he had visited them during their night meeting, during a drug transaction. They had joined others to shoot him giving him control of their will, he did not kill them, he allowed them to live. He had forced them to drive to his father's ruined castle and had tied them exactly at the place his mother was slaughtered. Then he had released their mind. Abiade had been the one begging more than the others, he was horrified with what he had done to him. But Abiade's mind was no longer blank, he could read his regrets of killing his mum. He had always lusted after her and she was one of the major reasons he had connived with his father's enemy to end his father, his mum had been the main price otherwise he had been satisfied with being his father's right hand man, but his mother had tried to stab him when he attempted to rape her before taking her hostage. From Abiade's thought, Abiade felt he could have waited. He had lusted after her from the very day his father had raped his mum in her father's presence. He was the one who silenced his mum's father. Abiade did not know his mum had a knife, she had actually stabbed his shoulder and he had seized the knife and stabbed his mum on her chest. From Abaide's thoughts Abiade's hot temper had made him loose what he had always yearned for. He had felt responsible for her death. Abiade was crying but his heart was dead to his tears. If it was only his mum he wanted, then he could have worked with him to end his dad, then



he could have wooed her the normal way. That was not a rescue, he was planning to take her from frying pan to fire. Abiade was planning to take his mother captive. He wished he could read Abiade then, he would have prevented everything.

"You knew I had plans to end my father. From what I just read from you, you were suspicious but you still took away my right. It does not matter whether it was a mistake, you stabbed my mum, you killed her and you also did not have a better life to offer her, you could have spared my mum" he had told Koko Abiade before using a knife to write 'you could have left my mum' on all their backs amidst their screams. He had waited for night before controlling them to hang themselves after stripping them naked. People usually said revenge did not give satisfaction, that was for them because he felt satisfied.

He understood the meaning of repentance, his mum had once told him that God would forgive his father if he repented, that some who committed worse than his father had repented and became preachers, she had even pointed Paul in the bible. He was not going to argue with that but from all the beliefs his mother had installed in him, he was sure God would not have allowed those he killed to get to him if they were among those who needed a second chance. The fact that they got to him was a clear indication that their case had been closed long ago. He had felt relief. That was the only time he had the boldness to visit his mother's grave. He had gotten the location from Abiade. He cared less about what was done to his father's body. He later got to know that they were all buried in a mass grave by the government because most of them that were inside the palace were burnt beyond recognition. Bella's father was also among the dead.



He had gone to a tattoo shop and made the artist to tattoo a mark on his back, one for each of the people he took down. They were total one hundred and thirty three. Then he had opened his last death ledger, the policemen who had invaded the palace and killed even his old nanny who was still around because of his mum. She was like a mother to his mum. From what he got from Abiade, the policeman who had sent his mother back to his father was among them. He had been transferred away from that area but had worked his way back. He was the first policeman he showed himself to, and did not waste time to end the man when he attempted to shoot him, then he had a second target but Major had stopped him. Major had later told him he had known it must be him from the first time he read the way the men were committing suicide with a conflicting note beside their dead body. The government who had been silent had come into the issue after the death of the policeman but Major had decided to track him and stop him.

He was suddenly thrown back to reality, something was wrong with Bella.

CHAPTER EIGHTEEN

(Memories can take us away from the horrible present to a better past)

She knew she was in big trouble the moment Olisa dropped her in Cloud's house. Cloud, Roy and Saro were waiting for both of them in Cloud's sitting room. Cloud was the only one not sitting down. He was walking around, his anger visible on his movement. He turned immediately Olisa called him.

"What the f*ck happened?" Cloud shouted rushing towards her.

He was blocked by both Saro and Roy.

"Gogo calm down" Saro said.

"I'm f*cking talking to you" Cloud shouted trying to wriggle himself away from their grip.

"What the heck were you expecting to happen with the kind of man Tayo described?" she shouted back, something she had never done.

Maybe the thought of what would have happened to her if Wild was the corrupt soldier they had been made to believe, if Wild did not know her. She might have ended up like Amara because Wild already knew what they had planned to do to him. Maybe because she had never stood up to Cloud. She saw the surprise in all their faces but she needed to stand up for herself for once.

"I heard every damn thing Tayo said. You think he was not going to find out that I had cameras on my ears even if it was not activated? He said they are trained to detect even that. He pulled them off my ears. What were you expecting me to do? You were the one who forced me to sleep with him. What the f*ck did you expect me to do?" she shouted.

But her senses came back the moment Cloud brought out a gun.



"If any one of you f*cking touch me I'm going to blow your head off" Cloud warned them.

They knew when Cloud was pissed off and they knew when not to intervene. He had once shot Saro's leg when he tried stopping him from almost beating Lara to death after he accused her of seducing a VIP guest. She was on her own. Olisa shifted far away from her, not that he was even trying to block Cloud, he was as monstrous as Cloud.

She shifted back, her hands raised up.

"You cheap slot, you f*cking whore. I bet you had fun. I bet you gave him a blow job, I bet he gave you dopes and cash for a f*cking job well done" Cloud shouted.

"No I..." Cloud fired close to her making her to scream midway through her speech.

Cloud fired a second bullet, it hit the TV destroying it instantly. The others cawed away.

Cloud rushed at her and started dragging her. He dragged her to the room and shut the door. First thing he did was slam her to the door, the impact made her see stars. He did not let her recover before he started hitting and kicking her.

"You f*cking slot, you enjoyed it right?" he shouted as he hit and kicked her. He was not careful where he hit her. He had forgotten he was not supposed to injure her in a way that her injuries would start showing, it would ruin business for him, that was what he always said but the Cloud before her was not in control of himself.

"Please, please Cloud I'm f*cking sorry" she screamed as his punches sent hot melting lavas of pains to her body, but Cloud continued.

He suddenly stopped. She raised her head to see he was pulling off his belt.



"You dare talk back to me? After he has given you a blow job you feel you can talk back to me you cheap whore" he shouted.

She escaped the first two lashes of the belt but it pissed Cloud more. He pulled her by her hair and slammed her on the floor. It felt like thousands of hammers were being used to hit her head. She should have fainted from the impact but her body refused to faint. He started whipping her with reckless abandon while calling her a whore. He dropped the belt and went naked, then started tearing her shirt. He ripped her bras and pants off her body. She was in so much pain but the repulsion from his uninvited invasion was worse than the pain. It felt like millions of millipedes where running round her body, she would prefer dying to the feeling, but Cloud was still in rage as he pounded her right on the strong floor. He bit her breast making her to scream from the pain but he groaned from the pleasure he was having from inflicting the pain on her and bit her neck, then her ears as he groaned and as she screamed. She heard Saro hitting the door.

"Gogo you will regret it if you kill her, Gogo" Saro shouted.

But it was already too late because she was slipping, slipping away from the millipedes, from the pain but suddenly, she felt him. She had almost forgotten she had a guardian.

His presence shocked her, it distracted her a little from reality.

'Bella, open up, you are resisting me, open up, allow me to take you away' she heard him.

'How?'

'Just think about letting me take over your body, please. You are slipping away, please



Bella, please' There was a sense of urgency in his voice.

That was not the how she was asking about. There was more than fifteen distance from Cloud's place.

'Are you here? You can't be around' she protested afraid for him.

'You fear for me is touching but I'm still in my lodge, that was the reason for the union, for that electrified wielding. I can connect to you anywhere Bella. Bella don't leave me.'

The command in his deep baritone voice made her aware she was really slipping away. But Cloud was not noticing it because he bit her again on her left breast. She felt the pain but could not scream.

'Lara open up or I will seize it by force but it will be painful' he commanded.

She thought about her dreams, about her little self on top of Guardian, she felt warm from the memory of her dream. All of a sudden, she was no longer in control of herself, she could not feel any pain. It was as if she was observing her body away from her body. Something told her Wild was bearing the brunt. She could feel his bestial anger towards Cloud. He was thinking of coming over to end Cloud.

'I'm all yours Wild, my mind, my body are all yours, it's just my flesh he is taking' she find herself thinking.

She just did not know why but she had a feeling she had to calm Wild down. She felt it the moment he calmed down.

'Why can't I feel what he is doing to me, are you taking the brunt.'



'Yes.'

'No, you...'

'Sssh, I want to take you away. I might destroy everything if we remain in this room.'

'Where are you taking me to?'

'Memory lane. I've checked and it looks like you have permanent memory loss.'

'No, I ..'

'Sssh stop panicking, I can still restore it back. I am going to remind your mind everything.'

'How?'

He did not answer but she found herself becoming little, she found herself back as the Lara in her dream, only this time, she just knew she was Lara.

She was made to experience the time Guardian had beaten up Ojo and company, then the night he had brought her to his dad's palace. It was different, it was like remembering a past event. He took her back to so many memory lanes, it was like getting back a file from the recycle bin of a laptop. She was remembering with each memory lane. She was remembering Guardian, she was remembering he was the warmth in her cold. He took her to when she met the dogs his father used to throw some people to. The dogs would tear them apart, she wanted to run from that horror, but Guardian wanted her to go through that memory.

'You must remember the good and bad, if not, you will have a blank space when we are



Edit with WPS Office

through' Wild said.

'Okay' she thought.

The man was caught trying to steal drugs which he normally sold to private customers for his own gain. Guardian's father had said he was giving him the ultimate sentence which was to be thrown into a pack of about ten police dogs who ate raw flesh. They always fed them with live animals which they killed themselves. Guardian's father had forced everyone to watch, to show them the punishment he would be giving to stealers. The man was thrown into their very large cage which was large like a big room.

The dogs had torn the man to pieces, his screams kept sounding on her head over and over again until Guardian had helped. Going through that memory was making her feel cold but she felt warmth immediately. Then Guardian took her to another memory of the dogs. Another man was accused of stealing but Guardian had told his father that the man was innocent. The man was one of Guardian's friends. Guardian said his father was deliberately doing it because he wanted to punish Guardian for disobeying him. He wanted Guardian to shoot someone but Guardian had refused. Guardian's mum had pleaded with his dad but he had refused. Guardian had left the room the night before the man was going to be thrown to their cage, few minutes later, she had heard the horrible howling of the dogs. Guardian had poured fuel on them and set them ablaze. Before they could quench the fire, they were all dead.

Guardian's father then shot Guardian's friends on his head opening his skull. She and Guardian's mum screamed as they watched Mikel's dead body but Guardian did not scream nor cry.



"I'm going to tear you to pieces" Guardian had told his dad.

"Or maybe, I will open her skull first" Guardian's father had shouted pointing the gun at her, making her scream.

"There is something you have no idea of, if she dies I die. But I would force my will to stay long enough to end you" Guardian's calm words sent shivers to her bones making her shake from dread.

She knew everyone felt it including Guardian's father.

His father did not say a single word before walking back to his palace. He did not see that man again. She gasped.

'How did I know that was my last sight of him?' she thought

'Because your memory is almost hundred percent back. I'm taking you through major events. There is one last one, two weeks after the confrontation with my father' Wild replied.

She saw herself sitting in between Guardian's legs, under a huge mango tree. She was reading Alice in Wonderland, their bicycles were parked by the tree. Guardian helped her with words she could not pronounce. Suddenly, Guardian jerked up.

"Something is wrong" Guardian said standing up with her. He was looking bigger and his voice was already deep.

"What is wrong" she asked.

"No, no, my mum" Guardian shouted.



He started running pulling her along, leaving their bicycles behind. At a point, Guardian lifted her and placed her on his shoulder. It was getting dark when they got near the palace. Guardian halted and pulled her down. She turned and gasped. There were smokes rising from the palace.

"Fire" she screamed but Guardian covered her mouth.

He carried her and ran into the thick bush they usually go to hunt for rabbit holes, but he ran past the area and continued running. She saw something disturbing the moment he dropped her. He was shaking, he was afraid, that was the first time she would see Guardian like that.

"Bella, stay here and don't move. This shrubs will hide you. I need to go try rescue my mum" Guardian said shaking.

"Mum? The fire. Mum is in the fire" she said panicking.

"Yes, something bad is happening. I need to go check. Don't move Bella" he instructed and turned to leave but she grabbed his shirt.

"Guardian, I'm afraid. Please don't leave me. Let's go and rescue mum from the fire together" she cried.

"It's not just a fire Bella, just stay here. I promise to come back. You know I will never leave you. I will come back for you no matter what but you must stay here."

"But I'm afraid."

"I know, you will be safe here, I will soon be back."



Guardian pulled her hands away and started running. He disappeared from sight.

'Bella, allow me' she heard Wild's voice.

'What?' she thought.

'You can remember now, I want to know what happened after I left, continue from where I stopped.'

'But how?'

'Just remember. What happened after I left?'

Almost immediately she remembered, like floods of information coming at the same time. It was a wonderful experience.

'Bella' Wild called for her to concentrate.

She started remembering what happened. She had cried and waited for Guardian but he did not show up. It became dark and she became afraid. She could still see the heavy smoke from the palace. She started crying and calling him to come back.

"Guardian please come back, Please don't leave me" she cried and kept on saying.

Suddenly, she heard the rustling of the bush not far from her. She thought he was Guardian, she wanted to scream to tell him he was at the wrong place but shook from fear when she heard an unfamiliar sound.

'That's the sound of a bush cat Bella' Wild spoke to her mind.

'But I was afraid. I have never heard the meow of a cat before' she responded.



'What happened next?'

She continued down the memory lane. She scurried out of her hiding and started running far away from the noise, tree shrubs grazed her skirt, her legs and her arms but she did not stop because she could still hear the voice of the animal. She believed the animal was going to kill her. Suddenly, she started falling. She screamed as she tumbled, her body grazing rocks and sharp grasses, cutting her skin. She hit the ground and went blank.

'Continue' Wild said.

She opened her eyes and discovered she was lying down on a mat in a hut. An elderly man was sitting close to her.

'Pause' Wild said.

'What?'

'I know him, don't you recognize him?'

'Should I?'

'Yes Bella, you did not recognize him then because you had permanent memory loss but it's back now Bella. Look at him again and you will remember.'

She did as instructed and the memory hit her square on her head but Wild prevented her from feeling it.

'Hunter Seyi' she said.



'Yes Bella, the hunter that used to help us catch a rabbit. I had taken you to his hunt to introduce you to the man that used to teach me how to hunt. He knew what he was doing. No wonder I could not find you. He must have ran away with you for your safety believing I was dead. I guess your memory loss helped him to keep you far away and safe. I knew you were okay, I don't know how but I just knew you were not dead.'

She started crying, all this while it was someone she knew, no wonder he was surprised she did not recognize him and she had been pissed off and had refused to listen to him on his sick bed.

'Bella don't' Wild commanded stopping her tears midway.

'Don't do that, I thought you promise you will never take over my will without my permission?'

'If you cry, it will show physically, I don't want that to happen. Let's stop the memory lane now.'

'No Guardian I don't want to. See Guardian I think...' she paused.

'Wait, Guardian, Guardian' she screamed in her mind.

It just dawned on her that Wild was Guardian.

'Oh my gosh, Guardian, you came back for me. You came, Guardian..'

'Sssh, don't cry. Hold your emotions, you need to remain in coma.'

'What?'



'You are in coma, on oxygen and on drips with a machine monitoring you. There is just much I can control, I may lose control if you are like this and they will notice you are coming back.'

'I don't understand Guardian.'

'Call me Wild.'

'No Guardian, I can't believe this. Please don't be the fragment of my imagination, please....'

'Stop that, stop f*cking seizing me like that' she shouted in her mind.

'You are not listening Bella. Any excitement or extreme sadness is almost beyond my control. I told you that is the only thing I cannot control. But I have been trying to control it for the first time but I don't think I can do that for long because I might also faint. I'm exhausted and please watch your language. The F word is not allowed in my unit.'

She was going to address his last statement later but there were more pressing issues, like she being in a hospital and Guardian being exhausted.

'How long have I been out?'

'A day.'



CHAPTER NINETEEN

(In a card game, the 'suspend' card you've played can become dangerous especially when you have nothing else but a bunch of worthless cards-Wild)

That took her aback.

'What the fuck...'

'Language Bella' Guardian interrupted her.

'Is it that you don't understand my question?' she asked.

How was it possible she had been out for a day?

'Bella you were not having a dream, you were going down memory lanes. Of course I know what you asked. Cloud had stopped when he discovered you were no longer responding. He had called Saro who was still knocking at the door and your battered body was rushed to the hospital, where they are still battling for your life.'

'A fuc....a day? What of you?'

'I've also been on my bed and I'm over exhausted. I will soon break the connection. If I don't I might go off and I might die.'

Panicked gripped her.

'Get out now. You can come back later' she shouted.

'Not yet.'



'No, I can bear it, please Guardian, I can't lose you now. I need to meet you life and climb you and feel you life. Please just bring me back and get out.'

'I love you Bella.'

'Get out' she shouted again.

'After this.'

'After what?'

'Just listen.'

Almost immediately, she started hearing their voices. It was sudden making her start to panic.

'Don't' Guardian commanded.

She wanted to shout at him but stopped, he had said something about him being exhausted. She became silent and listened.

"Gogo at least eat the f*cking food they brought for you and sit down. Walking your ass round the room won't bring her back or repair the damage you caused. We should be grateful no serious internal bleeding or damages, just the bruises and signs of a head injury" Saro said.

'What did you do to my body?' she asked.

'I healed you internally.'

She remembered other times, how it could drain him.



'How are you still not knocked out? You are also holding me. How? Please get out' she panicked.

'I want to know what cards my enemies are about to play.'

'I will tell you later, they won't know. I will pretend I'm not awake.'

'It won't work Bella. They will know once you are back. The machine will beep. I don't think Cloud will like to discuss me if you are awake.'

'Promise me you will be okay?'

'I have not even started tasting you, why will I give up on life now?'

'Pervert.'

'I love you.'

'I want to see you Guardian, I want to make sure you are real, that you are the one I made love with...'

'Stop distracting me, damn it Bella.'

She felt hot sensations all over her body. She just knew it was all him.

'Sorry' she said smiling in her mind.

'Listen' was his response.

"F*ck, what the f*ck did I do?" Cloud was shouting and repeating himself over and over again.



"Boss you've been like this since you called Saro to check her out' Olisa said.

"Saro you are not f*cking saying a good thing. It's been a day. You keep telling me she is in coma, like not unconscious but coma. Can't you check her again?" Cloud asked.

"And I've told you many times that once she comes to, this machine will tell us. Right now she is cold. Like there is no sign she will even become a bit conscious not to talk of being conscious. This is where medicine can't help. I've done my work as a doctor."

"What if she is pretending? What if she does not want to come back?"

"I can say your last question is possible but for her pretending is a no no. She cannot pretend Gogo. How many times will I explain how this machine works? Once she shows any sign of consciousness, you will even know. Right now she is barely alive and can die any moment from..."

"Don't you f*cking say that" Cloud shouted interrupting Saro.

From the sounds she was hearing, it looked like he was strangling Saro.

"Calm down Gogo" Saro said, his voice sounding suffocated.

"Boss calm down" Olisa joined Saro to plead.

After some seconds, Saro started coughing.

"Sorry bro. I'm just f*cked up. I don't know what came over me. I can't explain how I'm feeling."

"Fear Gogo. What you are feeling is fear and it's the kind of fear you have for people you

love" Saro answered.

"I don't f*cking love her" Cloud shouted.

"I won't argue with you. I love my smooth neck" Saro replied.

"Boss I have never in my life seen you act this way, both the way you battered her body and the way you are reacting now. What is wrong Boss?" Olisa asked.

"Okay I f*cking admit it. I felt something liquid and bitter on my tongue the moment I noticed she was no longer crying and moving her body. I can still taste it Olisa, I can still f*cking taste it. Maybe you have an idea what is wrong with me?"

"If you won't choke me" Olisa responded.

"Tell me."

"There is nothing to tell. Saro is right. I know that f*cking feeling. Had a girl I was in love with before I met you. Before that f*cking bastard raped and murdered her after he came to kill me and did not see me. I only took part of his dope because he was not paying, like ten times lower than what you dash me for a f*cking dangerous job I usually do for him, more dangerous than yours. That was why I looked for you, that was why I told you about him and all his f*cking secrets. You had believed me boss and you had helped me kill him. I had told you I wanted the honor of executing him myself. You knew I used to work for him, you knew he was your arch rival yet you believed and gave me the honor and recruited me. You helped me get vengeance for my girl. She was f*cking pregnant men. I owe you Boss, I can never betray your trust. You have no idea how many men will die for you. You see what others cannot see and you don't use fear to get

our respect, you always earn it every f*cking time. That's why Roy had stopped you from killing those Special Force failures because your men believed in you, they believe that they can come back and you will hear them out. That's it boss. I have tasted that bitter liquid as I ran to save her, then it had filled my mouth when I saw my door was broken and she was naked on the ground and not breathing. She was good men. There is nothing rewarding to be good. She took my heart with her until Amara, although Amara is nowhere near her. Boss you love her, that's the truth. You've been doing well financially before she came, I don't think is your business you are worried about. You know I am aware of those years you could not take a woman, then you met her. I think Saro is right."

There was silence after Olisa ended his long speech.

'He does not love me' she protested.

'My dad thought he loved my mum' Guardian responded.

'What do you mean by that?'

'Exactly what you think I mean, only he does not have any iota of idea on how to adore a woman he loves, just like my dad. He has a twisted mindset that showing you love is a sign of weakness.'

'Why do I feel you knew all along?'

'From the very first day I walked into that club, I knew my fears, I knew he will never willingly let you go, I knew he will not mind giving up all to keep you. The issue here is same with me.'



'I don't believe you.'

'You don't believe I will give..'

'No, not that. I don't believe Cloud will give up anything to keep me, you have no idea of what you are talking about.'

He did not answer. She wanted to explain more but Cloud spoke.

"I am not in love you all. I am not in love. I am Cloud, love does not exist. I get aroused, I have sex. That is the sweet feeling I know. I am like this because I know I can't have that luxury if she dies. You have no f*cking idea how a lack of that feels like. You have not damn idea how it feels like to not fully feel pleasures from sex, I had to take them to that show room before I can get stiff enough till she was brought here. You know the plan was to sell her and her daughter and get my money back. I only wanted to try sample her but it was f*cking bliss men. I just could not send that sweetness away and she learned how to strip so fast and I loved the way men drool over her, it turns me on men. But you know the catch? I don't need any extra stuff to stimulate me, I just need to see her and I'm good to go. She is just a possession my body cannot do without" Cloud said.

"Anything that will make you feel okay Gogo" Saro replied.

She felt a stir within her, an angry one. It was Guardian. What Cloud said must have tipped him off.

'Guardian calm down, don't go wild now. It's just the flesh he took not even my body.'

She felt him calming down and sighed.



She heard the sound of the door being opened.

"Boss any news?"

It was Roy.

"Still in coma" Saro answered for Cloud.

"What are we going to do about Wild, he did not show up at the club last night and Marvin said he did not leave his lodge since Joan left. I have no f*cking idea what his game is but it's a good thing he did not come because Joan is not yet availabl..."

"Joan is never going to be available. Watch your f*cking mouth" Cloud shouted making her panic but Wild stop her again.

'I can't survive not seeing you again. I know I chose to come back but this is different. I now remember you as Guardian. I can't.'

'Sssh, let's take one step at a time Bella' Guardian responded and she wanted to answer but Saro was talking.

"That is the bigger issue now Cloud, she needs to be out of the danger zone. Every other thing is secondary" Saro said.

She had missed the other thing Saro said.

"I seriously don't know what f*cking came over me. I can't even believe I did this to her like seriously. I had been on the edge from the very moment you activated the cameras and sound and discovered they were not where they were supposed to be. I just could not imagine someone else having Joan, it was making me go mad. Then she had come



back looking like she went out for a picnic with her longtime boyfriend she has not seen for a while. She was looking flushed and satisfied. It was almost like she was telling me he satisfied her more than I've ever done and it drove me mad knowing she actually had sex with him. I felt jealous. I don't know how to explain it, and then she had answered me back, she had shouted at me. Almost like Wild gave her confidence and an alternative, almost like Wild is trying to woo her to him, like Wild wants her to believe she can get away from me. I was pissed off men and I lost control for the first f*cking time" Cloud said.

'If only he knows how right he is' Guardian said.

"But Boss I was there in the hospital when she knelt down and begged you she did not want to go. She did not go there by choice, we forced her to" Olisa said.

"I f*cking know that, I was not expecting our plans will not work. I was not expecting her to come back looking flushed and satisfied. I was not expecting her to talk back to me like she has a choice between me and Wild like Wild can protect her from me" Cloud said.

"That is why I said Joan in coma and Wild still wild and untamed are both our biggest issues" Roy said.

"I don't give a f*ck about his demand. I am going to take him out, I can't share him with Joan. I will leave no trace to me" Cloud said.

"That's why I came Boss, there is trouble Boss" Roy said.

"What trouble?" all of them chorused.



"You know how you want to know someone to his home? I have been working to get more news from Tayo. He had promised to give me light if he sees and I got his message delivered few hours ago."

'What is it?' she asked Guardian.

"What is it?" all of them asked Roy.

'I have no idea' Guardian replied.

"It's something you have to hear and see for yourself. Can I play it?" Roy asked.

"No, she heard last time" Cloud said.

"I like your hope Gogo. If thinking she is conscious will make you feel good" Saro said.

"I don't understand" Cloud said.

"She is in coma, meaning she is almost not breathing. You can as well slice her hand open and she won't respond. She is not here and she cannot pretend to be awake. Roy can play it and use a loudspeaker and she won't hear any f*cking shit" Saro said.

There was a pause, no one spoke. After some seconds she heard Tayo's voice.

"Cloud I got your message and I got the money. I am not doing this because of the money but because of our long business and friendly deals which I don't want to end soon. Cloud run. I mean it as I am saying it, run. I just came back from a meeting with commanders and you must run. There is a difference between retreat and surrender, there is a difference between bravery and foolishness. Right now retreating is bravery for you and fighting is foolishness and you will lose. I know you are confused why I am



sounding like this, but you must run. I won't bother if you have not been a good friend. You can take all the drugs you have, take your money, use your money to hire a ship and retreat. If I stop this video without explaining why you should run, I know you won't run. Everybody was made to do a briefing by the president. Normally, we don't participate in closed briefing, it was an open briefing but the president was not in a good mood. According to him, two Special Force agents were injured in your territory and the one still in coma is the son of his childhood friend. I have no idea how you let them escape but that is not the issue right now. You won't believe what happened next. The president asked Ahmed to update him on The Circle agent in your territory. The agent was not mentioned and Ahmed had nothing much to say, he just told the president that the agent is still working and no evidence yet. The president ordered Ahmed to tell the agent to hurry up and they should make sure he is updated because he is ready to issue a bounty on you, wanted dead or alive once evidence is found against you because he is angry. He said he knows the Special Force soldier personally. Now see the big issue. First, he has given the Circle a two weeks ultimatum. Two, Ahmed has confirmed the agent landed on your territory safely and the instruction was for him to never leave your territory no matter what during his undercover mission until evidence is found against you. You know what that means? It means if that agent dies, whether his body is found in Cameroun or in Niger Republic, you will become the prime suspect and there will be soldiers surrounding you within an hour. Three, which is the main issue is the person I'm suspecting to be in your territory. Even if I may be wrong, as long as The Circle are in your territory, I will still advice you to retreat because they calculate numbers different from the normal way. Let me explain. If Ahmed wants to report targets or enemies, he

does not say his agents are two against two, no. If he says one against two, it means one against twenty. And he believes one of his agents can handle five that is one against hundred. But see the issue, he said he is without doubt that the agent on ground can handle fifty, please you do the math, plus the fact that he was missing in the meeting. I think for the first time in years, Wild is doing an undercover mission again. There is nobody that suits that description. Ahmed said you will be another Kiko in no distant time. Wild is extremely dangerous and their latest weapons are massive. But that is not all, the president wants at least five of them in your territory once Intel is confirmed. Cloud you cannot fight them, you can't handle Wild, and you can't kill him because you will be dead in few hours and don't think you will just kill him and run. Just run because you won't kill him just like that. They can detect a bug that has not been activated. They have powerful instinct to sniff out danger then become defensive or offensive. They are highly trained, they have been subjected to brutal trainings, they are lethal. You are not trained, you just have crowds which is a ride for them. Imagine Wolf, Fast and Mark or even Beast in your territory. At least you must have checked out what I said before, that bank robbery should give you a hint. He destroyed that number in few minutes, no bullet to his body. Just two took down Ojogolo in his territory, about eighty two without a scratch. Wild is dangerous. They are trained to study their environment in seconds and take out threat when necessary. I have given you the best gift you can ever have. If you have seen him, don't believe whatever he has told you. I mean what I just said, don't believe anything he has told you. Cloud you can't fight him. Only cowards don't know their fears and limitations and only a survivor can fight another day. Just run and lay low for a while. You can even go to other countries and start all over. I know you

are very witty, time to use it and stay alive. Bye till we see again, that's if you listen to me."

He stopped talking. There was absolute silence.

'That was it' Guardian said.

'That was what?'

'Major's backup plan. I briefed him on what is going on and he said he has a plan.'

'You mean, they intentionally allowed Tayo to know what he just told Cloud.'

'Yes.'

'But how will that help the captives?'

'The ball is on Cloud's court Bella.'

She wished she understood what he meant by that statement.

"Boss what are you gonna do? I don't think he has plans to really clear your name." Roy asked.

"Fucking shit. This is as a result of the mess up from those fucking idiots." Cloud shouted.

"This is deep shit Gogo."

"The only truth we know now is he is impotent without Joan. I agree with Roy" Olisa said.

"I am having a *cking delivery few days from now with buyers already on ground men. I



got Tayo, I got him men but I still want to tear Wild to pieces. I can't retreat with the shit going down in few days' time."

"You can keep him distracted till then Boss. I am already working on giving you a new identity and also securing a retreat plan for you if you choose to retreat" Roy said.

"Roy Joan is in coma." Saro said.

"That is the big issue if not I have a plan that will make you retreat and still set him up for a kill. If she can wake up then it's all done Boss. She just needs to wake up."

"I am not leaving without Joan, I don't mind breaking into Aso Rock to get her." There was determination in Cloud's voice. It gave her chills which Guardian stopped.

"I understand Boss" Roy said.

"But you know she won't agree to just retreat with you" Saro said.

"I don't give a f*ck about what she agrees or not agree on. I don't need her approval to get hundred percent pleasure. In fact I'm beginning to like this idea as long as your plan involves ending Wild, I think I need a retreat. I have loads of dopes worth almost a billion, I have cash worth more than ten billion plus the money I will take in few days' time. I think I need a break, a retreat far away the shit military. I have so many f*cking shit I want to do with her which I could not do because she must appear fresh at the club. I am feeling it, with my retreat, I can try out every fantasy with her and you three are coming with me, but as long as Wild will die."

"As long as you won't mind what you will lose in the process, I can assure you Wild will become a thing of the past, you will be celebrated as his downfall. Joan is right now the



problem. He wants Joan and he must still be reliving his last experience. We can distract him with Joan, it will give us enough time to finalize every fucking deal, then the rest will be history. I have everything in place. I was already working on it before I came here. They will never find us. The obstacle right now is just Joan. She just needs to wake up and you need to just endure sharing her for just few times and you can do all the shit you want with her."

'I'm scared Guardian, I know his fantasies, I won't survive' she said but Guardian did not respond.

She suddenly felt empty. Guardian had left.

'Please don't leave me. Please don't leave me with Cloud' she panicked.

She started hearing the sound of a machine beeping. Roy was saying something but stopped.

"This is unbelievable, she is back Cloud. You f*cking got lucky. I told you she has no internal injury, just the bruises on her body and maybe she might have hit her head bad and had a shock. I told you there is hope. Her body is unique. I have never seen this kind of thing in all my years of practice" she heard Saro's voice. He sounded so excited.

"Joan, can you hear me? Open your eyes and talk to me. I was too rough on you but you pissed me off babe. Open your eyes Joan" she heard Cloud's voice same time feeling slight pains on her body. She was afraid to open her eyes, she was afraid because it felt what Cloud was planning to do to her was the real thing. It felt like she had hallucinated Guardian.



CHAPTER TWENTY

(Not all captives remain because they have been brainwashed.)

He had to pull out because he too was slipping away and he almost could not stand up to take water from the fridge. He had never felt so weak and he hated the feeling.

He had heard Cloud's last words about his plans to make Bella a sex slave and it was making his wildness to roar with rage.

Even after he had taken some milk and eaten enough food, he still felt rage and it was making him unstable. Just the thought of Bella being with Cloud was getting him mad with rage. He knew he was losing control when he found himself by the gate. He squatted and held his head. He needed a distraction because his wildness was controlling him, controlling him to go take Bella away from danger. He had seen too much of her past with Cloud. It was horror because he did not only see it, he felt it. Cloud had raped her even when she was on her period. He stood up and held his head. He was losing control. Bella had been the one to go back but he just could not take it anymore, he would not be able to take another man invading his wife. He fought with his wildness and got to his room in time to pick his phone and call his best friend.

It was 5:49AM am, so they would not be outside. He wanted to talk to him, to let him



know he had lost it and he had broken the rule. If Bella had not insisted on going back, the war would have ended a long time ago. He also wanted to tell him he still wanted to rescue Bella. He had always been the one to offer help, always the one everyone looked up to for solution to every problem but he was in terrible need of a debriefing. He wanted to call Major but changed his mind, his best friend was the best option.

He was relieved when he picked.

"The last time you called me by this time, it was to ask me about my kissing experience with Halima. That was more than four years ago. Dude what's up? In case you don't know it's 5:50AM. Hope you know I'm married?"

He did not answer, he just listened to his friend's voice. He was already distracting him. He remembered when Beast had called him to ask for help on what to do with Halima because she wanted him to show her how to kiss. Cindy had told Halima that captives gave their rescuer hugs and kisses. Halima had taken her seriously and had pressurized a surprised Beast to show her how to give kisses. He had known something was up with Beast because Beast wouldn't have bothered calling him if he was not having feelings for Halima which he was fighting not to accept because Halima was short, dark and slim and Beast was only attracted to tall, chubby and fair ladies. He had told Beast to stop disturbing him and give Halima a kiss and he knew it was more than a kiss after Beast refused to explain how far he went. At the end, he married the opposite of what he thought he liked in a woman.

"Ola. Your silent is disturbing. What is it?" Beast asked.

"Where is Halima?" he asked.



"What do you mean by that question? You have started."

"Your voice is just normal and your heart rate is stable."

"I seriously don't understand you Ola but I hope nothing is wrong, I hope you did not see something off about Halima the other day. Please tell me."

"Obinna stop being an emotional train wreck. You are already panicking. Halima is fine. I just noticed she is not with you that's all."

"She is having her bath because she has to attend to some customers by 6:30. Ola why are you calling?"

"I'm calling because I'm now a train wreck Obinna. For the first time in my life, I need help."

"What is wrong?"

He heard a little shuffling, indicating Beast was sitting up.

"Bella is wrong. I can't do this anymore Obinna. For the first time, I am understanding the difference between feeling someone's emotions and actually experiencing one myself. I now understand you Obinna. I now understand your pains and your fears and your protective instinct because I just broke the rule. I almost ended the mission and many captives would have been lost to us and even their masters. But I am still thinking of ending it Obinna. What should I do?"

"You can start by telling me everything and please make sure you don't keep the vital information like the way your best friend did not know how far your gift went and how



much of your past." He sounded angry.

"You can't still be angry about that? I explained why I kept it a secret."

"Bullshit Ola. Bullshit. I knew your gift went more than you let out and I knew there was more to you saying you had child marriage, then your father's palace was invaded and you lost her. You had to keep so much away from me. I had thought your mind reading was just me, with the way you always wanted to know what I was thinking about..."

"You were the only one I did that to because you always knew what I was doing, you could sense I was reading you which was something special about you and your way of thinking is just intriguing. Don't forget you kept stiffs about your childhood too. If not for Ibe, I wouldn't have known much."

"So what's with you breaking your own rules?"

He told him everything. He even told him what sex felt like with Bella. Then he told him what he could do after he made love to Bella and how Cloud had battered Bella while he just watched. Then he told him the last thing Cloud talked about and how his mind was raging to get her out of there and take her far away from harm and pains. Beast was silent for a while.

"So right now, Cloud is planning to escape and he plans on taking Bella along and you feel you broke the rule when you refused to let her go?"

"Feel? No I did not feel. I knew I broke the rule."

"That alone shows that you are the only one that can lead us. One big reason I wanted you to lead from the beginning because I would have not allowed her to go even if she



wanted to and I would have not felt I broke any rule neither would I have accepted that I broke the rule. Just the thought of being in your position is making me stir with rage. I am very sure Ghost would have done the same and don't ask me what you think Jason would have done because Jason would have put Cindy as a witness and there will be no rule broken. You could have done that Wild, put her as a witness. I know Cloud will fight to take her back and some captives will be lost but buddy, that will only come to my mind after Cloud is dead. I seriously don't know how you allowed her go back but trust me, what you are feeling now is nothing close to losing control. You are hundred percent still in control. Exactly what defines you as the best and our leader. Then that girl Bella is something else. I believe without an iota of doubt that she was coined for you Ola. You are like our king Ola and there is no better queen than that lady. She has won my heart as the strongest woman. There is no body that will suit you better. I can't wait to meet her, she has earned my respect. And if you literally need to break down walls to get to her call me to tear it down because my mind right now has already adopted her as my king's wife and I'm right now stirred up. I'm feeling like going to rescue her right now. You are not doing anything wrong Ola. You are even surprising me. Let's make sure she comes back home a hero."

"I knew it Obinna. I was right to call you. Thanks. I need this boosting before facing Cloud later this night. Thanks. I saw her mind and determination. She wants to rescue everybody and she is willing to go through anything to make sure they are free, she wants to make sure the new ones are not sold. I just feel I might forcefully pull her out."

"You've started it already, she has already been brutalized for going back. You can do it Wild. I cannot do it but you have started it. It's good you can track her without a bug.



That can help and also Cloud will not kill her. You just need to talk with Jason after you've honed in to their technologies. You can suggest it to them."

"I don't understand."

"You explained in details how your gift works and I have not forgotten one bit of your explanation. I know it will be dangerous to even try to suggest Cloud's trafficking business to him and even if he thinks about his business dealings and files, you may not get the real thing you are looking for. Our mind can be trickery and can even deceive us to think of what we believe is true but I don't think it will be so for that computer guy."

"Roy?"

"Yes. Try do some suggestions about their technology and hone in on what they have, then send it to Jason. Leave Jason to handle it from there. He would know what to send. Roy won't see it as threat if you make it look like you are disregarding his ability. Let that be your focus for now because you need to move fast."

"Obinna thanks."

He could not find another word to say because Beast just gave him a card to play.

"Yeah. Just hold it Ola, it's a matter of time and.... Halima can you stop please?"

It just meant one thing, Halima was back. He wanted to end the call but just did not.

"Why should I stop?" Halima asked.

"Continue if you don't want to meet up with your customers and hey stop right there. If your body touches this bed, you are not leaving in the next four hours."



"You are such an insatiable Beast. But why do I feel like daring you?"

"Daring me? I was not threatening you. Just stating a fact."

"Are you not tired?"

"No, I don't even know him and I have never met him. Who is tired? Obim don't tell me you've been seeing a man called tired behind my back. Who is he, who is tired?"

Halima started laughing.

"Wait, why are you opening the wardrobe? I thought you wanted to dare me?"

"I'm not worried about the customers that are supposed to collect their burial clothes this morning. I am so happy I will not be seeing that woman again. She is just too matured and annoying. I don't want to come to the bed because Al will soon start knocking for a good morning. I don't have any cartoon to explain to her" Halima said.

Beast started laughing, he found himself smiling.

"So go take a shower big man, not now" Halima said.

"What did your customer do this time?" Beast asked.

"She said I am too childish with my behavior and she thinks I put my wedding ring by myself because there is no way a man can cope with my childishness. She said if it's her husband he would have beaten maturity into me. I told her my husband is okay with me but she said then my husband is a fool or I am using jazz and he will soon get tired of me."



"What exactly did you do Halima?"

"Nothing. I was playing with a customer's baby who was playing with her toys. Then I was excited that...."

"Forget it Halima. There is no way I will ever be tired of you and please don't become matured. I like you like this."

"I told her but she said no man will stand me for long."

"Bullshit."

"Same thing I told her. I pity her because she looks unhappy. I can't wait to get rid of her and her unhappy life. I can't understand why unhappy people feel they know how to live life and they want to teach a happy person like me how to be happy. She said she has been married for twenty eight years and she looked shocked when I asked her how many times her husband has beaten her because she feels it's okay if my husband had beaten sense into me. You know what she said?"

"No, tell me."

"She did not say anything, she just looked at me like I am crazy. I told her that her silence answers a lot. Her husband is the fool not mine. My husband does not beat women, only weak people he calls fufulele beat women. Beast is she a captive?"

"I don't understand your question?"

"I mean her husband beats her and she is free, she is not locked up in a room. She can leave. Is it that some people like being captives? Ha..."



"Halima I know..."

"Wait, Beast maybe she is a captive and her husband has locked her mind up. Maybe she cannot escape from him and he has made her to believe beating her is love. But she does not act like one. She acts like she is Mrs. know all. Well that's for her. If she wants to be beaten that's her own. I really told her a lot and she could only call me stupid. She said if she had not paid and the clothes were not almost done that she would have withdrawn the contract, then she walked out angrily and told me to make sure she meets her clothes this morning. All of us started laughing. It's good my workers are those who understand what being in captivity means and what freedom is. She does not like the way I behave yet she is always coming to sit with us and monitor the progress of her work like she has no other job" Halima said.

All Halima's employees were freed captives who had been debriefed and released to society. She could not take all but the little she had taken were doing so well. They had no idea her light was helping them. Even the woman she was talking about had no idea that her mind was attracted to the simplicity of Halima. It was also dangerous to Halima because she attracted the good and the bad. He had told Beast to always be careful. The good thing was Halima was not only protected by Beast but by everybody, especially Ghost who saw her as a sister and surprisingly Wolf who knew the dangers she could attract.

"Okay, so I suggest you join me here and she can get lost. They won't go naked to the burial. If she is pissed off, her husband can come fight me. And please can you stop taking customers like her? I'm waiting Obim."



"That's all you have to say?" Halima shouted.

"What else do you want me to say? I want the warm body of my wife on a surprisingly cold morning and I want to get hot before full dawn. Every other thing about an unhappy woman is bullshit. Come join me Obim."

"You are just unbelievable Beast. You are supposed to say it's okay. I love you and I don't care what others think about my wife because I so love her even though she acts like a child on few occasions."

"Few?"

"Okay on so many occasions but you get what I wanted you to say."

"I prefer I want to make love to my wife."

"I'm done with this discussion. How do I look?"

"I prefer your clothes off. You look hotter that way" Beast answered.

Halima started laughing.

"Beast you know I'm still around?" he said

"Ola, why are you still around?" Beast answered.

"I don't remember ending my conversation with you" he answered.

"Are you talking to someone?" Halima asked

"Wild" Beast answered.



"Like he has been listening to me?"

"Yes" Beast answered.

"I don't even care. What is there to hide? Hi Wild. When are you coming back with your queen?"

"Bye" Beast told him cutting the call making him laugh.

Then he felt nostalgic, he wanted that to be him and Bella. Beast deserved all the happiness he was having, he had lost so much. He knew Beast loved Abigail, his first wife not because Beast told him but because he had read him. He was the only one he broke the rule with. Beast was just fascinating to read. He was straightforward with his thoughts. He did not have that male ego of feeling better than someone else. He did things because it needed to be done. Like the time Beast had almost killed John and Wolf, he had read Beast and had known he was just trying to make them respect his mother who gave him the native pot Wolf and John felt he should throw away. The same native pot that had led him to Halima. As he was weak before Halima, so also was he extremely authoritative over her. Anything that concerned her safety was more important than Halima's feelings and the good thing was Halima had never argued with him on issues like that. On many occasions when Beast felt it was not safe for her to leave work or go to work, she had never questioned him. Even if it was a special customer who was having a wedding, Halima would not move an inch. It made Beast's life so easy. She understood everything Beast did was for her and Al. Beast had told him he was one lucky Bastard. Beast had always made sure to provide an alternative to every situation. The others ladies were okay but he knew Ella would rather drug Ghost



and go for her lectures while Mena would make sure Wolf followed her to her work place or provide someone to follow her. As for Cindy, Jason would not even ask or tell her, he would just drug her and explain his reasons when she might have woken up and would just take any consequences that came with it but Halima never argued with Beast, she would trust Beast to handle everything, except it had nothing to do with her safety which Beast always became a robot.

Beast loved Abigail. He had felt Beast's pain like it was his own when Abigail was murdered. That was one reason he had made others to adhere to Beast's warning of not interfering with his revenge for Abigail. He had thought that would at least calm him down, he never imagined Beast would ever think of committing suicide. Halima had been the saving grace but there was something he had not understand. Beast loved Abigail but his feelings for Halima was too extreme, it was more than love. It was almost like they were entwined together and he needed her to breathe and live. The waves of emotions he had noticed Beast had for Halima was compelling and deep. He thought he would never understand that feeling until he sighted a matured Bella, until he made love to her. That warmth, that softness, that feeling of something soft on his strong body, that piercing pain in his heart, her feelings for him was melting him in pieces that he was almost not breathing well because she was far away from him. If he was going to defeat the wildness in him, he needed all the strength he could muster because he was going to meet Cloud later in the night and he was going to hear their game plan, then play his card. The game was now deadly because Bella had become the ultimate price and Cloud wanted him dead. Cloud did not care what he would lose as long as he was dead. Roy and others did not understand Cloud, they must have thought

Cloud wanted him dead because he was about to ruin Cloud's business, but that was wrong. Cloud wanted him dead because he was the only threat to having Bella. Cloud somehow understood that as long as he was alive, Bella would never be his. He was almost thinking Cloud might not know it was same for him but after hearing and analyzing Cloud's speech at the hospital, he just knew Cloud was very much aware, Cloud was aware about the danger of letting him live. He could not wait for night to come.

As he started arranging his cards he could not stop thinking about Halima's question about captives who did not want freedom. It was making him love Bella in a way he could not explain. Bella knew she was free, she knew he could get her to safety but she had chosen to go back to the lion's den, she had chosen to remain a captive so others could be freed and he was going to make sure he did his own part by keeping his wild part at bay. He could not wait to see his brave queen.

CHAPTER TWENTY ONE

(The 'Suspend' card has been played, the ball is still on your court, but then there is no meaningful card, so you must go to general market, then you look up to see your

(opponent is not going to general market....and he has just two cards left.)

He had wanted to connect to Bella but did not because he needed to recover all his strength before meeting with Cloud. He was still feeling a bit tired when he drove to the club. It was Thursday, almost a week since he arrived Cloud's territory. The club was average in number. It would be filled up from Friday to Sunday but there was a knowledge that it would not have much numbers because of the absence of Bella. Cloud was also not in the club but Olisa was waiting for him. He did not allow him to order a drink before asking him to follow him to the meeting room. He ignored him and still ordered for a drink. He did not bother reading Olisa's mind because the waves of anger coming from him was enough to know he wanted to rip him apart. Beast was right, sometimes the mind could be deceptive. If not, there was no way Olisa's mind would believe he could rip him apart. Anger and wrath could also be a motivating factor because he was almost twice the size of Olisa.

He took the drink and nodded to Olisa, then followed him to the meeting room after taking two boxes from his jeep.

Cloud and Roy were waiting for them. Surprisingly, there were no additional security. Roy did the usual security check on him before he sat down.

"You did not show up last night?" Cloud asked.

He heard Cloud but it was time to hear their inner mind. He would do what Beast suggested after knowing what he had missed when he pulled out of Bella. Cloud was

hoping Roy had everything under control as he had promised. He was hoping to get the goods delivered in five days' time or less but he was more excited about the idea of starting all over, about the idea of practicing his sex fantasies with Bella. No wonder he believed Cloud never thought about his trafficking business. He had thought he meant drugs anytime Cloud thought about his goods. He glimpsed a little of Cloud's fantasies and closed up immediately before he changed his mind and attack Cloud. Cloud's mind was not organized and focused at the moment, he was just thinking of too many things. Nothing he needed as evidence.

As for Olisa, he was just thinking of following Cloud to wherever he was going to. He was also planning on taking Amara with him. Cloud had told him he wanted just five men to follow him. That meant he wanted just five of his body guards to know the truth. They would find a way to make the others believe they were not really retreating and if needed, the others would become the sacrificial lamb. Olisa felt that nothing would make him happy except he was dead and he was already regretting that he might not be the one to kill him.

"You gonna remain silent or what?" Cloud asked, his voice calm and calculative.

"I wanted to absolve and dwell in the pleasure I got for a while. It was more than I imagined, more than my fantasies" he answered and was satisfied when Cloud lost his composure.

"Boss, calm down" Olisa told Cloud.

He was not even hiding the fact that he was calming Cloud.



"The way I want to slaughter you right now" Cloud said.

He sounded like he was forcing the words out of his mouth.

"I'm glad you cannot because you know what you will lose. The fact that you even allowed me to make love to Joan told me more than enough that you've somehow confirmed I am legit. I wonder who told you. Only high ranked official can know about us. It worries me that someone high is working for you. That person should better not be caught."

Cloud started laughing then stopped almost immediately. He was reaching for his gun but Olisa called his attention. What Olisa and Roy did not know was the reason Cloud was reaching for his gun was not because of the high ranked official but was because he said he made love to Bella. It was making Cloud go mad with jealousy that Bella might have loved him. And Cloud was correct.

"Five more times. I can do that except you do some fucking shit and you will just end up at the right place you were supposed to be a long time ago" Cloud said.

"I think we should just go straight to business. I have the two boxes but there is no Joan."

"Joan is not available today, she would be tomorrow" Cloud said.

"Now you are the one breaking the deal."

"Fuck you. She had a fucking accident, she is still in the hospital" Cloud shouted.

"What kind of accident, how do I believe you?"



Cloud was already on him, his pistol already cocked and pointed on his head. He ignored Olisa and Roy's call to be calm.

"I don't explain things, I give orders. I don't need you to believe me, it's like you have forgotten who the boss is" Cloud warned.

"I can load a bullet and fire before you fire that gun. Do you have an idea the process of making a gun apart from loading bullets?" he asked.

There was no need to pretend anymore. If Cloud was trying to challenge him, he was not going to reject. He hoped Cloud would take the bait but he did not. He pulled out his gun. He got a glimpse of Cloud's reasons. Cloud believed Tayo that they were lethal, he had his doubts but he was not ready to find out if Tayo was right.

"Joan had a home accident and she will be available tomorrow, that's it" Cloud said.

"I am not stupid Cloud. But why? Why will you hit her? Is it because your plans did not work? You know she did her best but you guys just did not understand that I come from the best ranked armed unit in the whole of Africa. She was even trying to resist me but melted to my touch. So why will you hit her. I don't believe the shit about home accident."

Cloud looked at him. He did not go for his weapons. He was now in control of his emotions, he was rather studying him.

"She is my property. I owe you no explanation what I do with my property."

He wanted to counter him but he nodded.



"You say she will be ready tomorrow?" he asked connecting to Bella.

He knew the moment she felt his presence.

'Guardian, you are real or am I hallucinating you?'

She was panicking. He could see that her memory was fully back but she was yet to accept he was back.

'Ssh, I'm real. I won't be able to keep the connection for long. Just wanted to find out how you are doing.'

'They are planning to retreat and he is planning to make me a sex slave' she panicked.

He could not answer her because Cloud was saying something.

"So just bring the boxes tomorrow. As long as you keep to your own deal, we are almost good."

"Almost good?" he asked.

"Yeah, cause I will never be friends with you. I can't believe I'm sharing Joan."

'That's not my name. And I don't belong to you' he heard Bella screaming in her mind.

"And I hope you are not planning something stupid this time. I know Roy is good with technology and you may have another plan to use to blackmail me but let's be clear on something. As good as Roy is, he will not even pass our technology test. He is nothing compared to my unit computer gurus. Don't waste your damn time" he said closing up on Bella and honing into Roy. He needed to pay hundred percent attention to Roy.



Roy started laughing. Then he started remembering what he could do which he believed no one could do. As Roy's mind ran through his gadgets, his programming languages, he stored them in his brain. He could not understand many of the things he was thinking but he stored all. It was not for him, it was for Jason.

"Like Cloud said before, your overconfidence is what will end you" Roy said.

He had expected Roy to boast about what he could do but he did not. From Roy's mind, Roy felt it was not necessary to prove anything. Roy was very sure of his capability.

"Whatever" he said standing up.

"You also make sure not to try anything stupid with Joan, cause hell will pay earth a visit. I hope you get me?" Cloud warned.

He connected back to Bella before turning to face Cloud.

"Same here, stop beating her because she prefers my body to yours. Let's hope there is no more home accident."

It happened within seconds. Cloud lost control, brought out his already cocked pistol and fired at him with the aim to kill him. He dodged in time and the bullet hit the wall close to him. He was able to control his mind from automatically seizing Cloud's mind. He had to make do with his training. If he was not alert enough, he would have seized Cloud's mind and the game would have been over for both him and Cloud with hundreds of captives being the big losers.

He heard Bella's scream but with her mouth. He seized her voice and stopped her midway.



'You know you will be termed mad and you will be delayed from meeting me?' he cautioned before releasing her voice.

He felt her relieve. She was relieved he was still alive before he pulled out.

Everything happened in seconds. Within that seconds, he quickly honed into all of them. The three were all shocked and now afraid of him. The uniform thing ringing from them was 'Tayo was fucking right.'

But their thoughts became different when they realized that Cloud had really fired at him with the aim to kill. Olisa quickly brought out his gun while Cloud pointed his gun at him. They were waiting for his reactions. They were waiting for the card he was going to play. The tension coming from them especially from Roy was too thick.

"I am going to pretend nothing happened for the sake of Joan. I'm not ready to give up on such sweetness especially when I made a deal for just six times. I still have five times but if you cock that gun it's all over" he warned Roy.

"Tomorrow then" he said, then opened the door and left the room but did not move away from the door.

"Fucking shit" Olisa said.

He was not hiding the fear in his voice.

"What just happened?" Cloud asked.

"Boss you lost control for the first fucking time and you shot at him. You almost killed him boss" Roy stammered from fear.



"I know that Roy. I mean he was backing me, how was he able to dodge?"

"Boss were you doubting Tayo? He told us everything boss" Olisa said.

"That is not important now. Boss, that dude just saved us by dodging because if I had doubt about what Tayo said, I believe every fucking thing now. He sensed the danger like Tayo said and he dodged in time. I don't think we would have had enough time to escape his unit's wrath. You must not forget he is their leader boss. You can't lose it. Boss you have to know that Joan being the only one that gives him erection is a blessing in disguise. We just witnessed he can dodge a bullet he is not seeing. It explains how he was able to kill the four special force failures. Tayo said they can detect a danger to them like the one he called Wolf, that's why they are lethal boss. It makes sense, it explains why he is so full of himself, unshaken and overconfident. We just fucking saw what happened with our eyes. The fact that he dodged scared the shit out of me more than the fact that you actually took a shot at him, more than the fact that you actually lost control for the first time. I have no fucking idea what would have happened if he retaliated. Just see Joan as a blessing, because she just fucking saved us. She is our ticket right now. It's just fucking five times and you can have her the way you want" Roy said.

"Boss you remembered our first meeting. He knew there were snipers on the roof, he knew where the dangers to him where positioned. I've always been disturbed anytime I remember that day" Olisa said.

"He knew that, like he actually told you?" Roy asked.

"Not just that. He was able to know that only one of the sniper was a threat to him



because they lost their fucking mind watching Joan's performance" Olisa answered.

"So bottom line is The Circle unit are very dangerous and lethal and difficult to waste as Tayo put it because they are trained by one Ahmed to sense danger or rather their sixth sense is high and this Ahmed has used it to make them a lethal weapon and Wild is their leader who even Ahmed and Tayo is scared of. And the president wants five of them here and that bank robbery guy which I already read about and thought it was a movie is part of his unit but he is not their leader which means Wild is more dangerous than him" Cloud said but he was calm. Cloud was tearing down his emotions and using his wit.

"Yes" Roy and Olisa chorused.

"Boss, knowing our opponent's strength does not mean we have lost, it means we cannot fight them on their terms because we will lose. You need to keep your emotions in check boss. Let's distract him with Joan. Please boss. We must play to win and we must know we are dealing with a wild creature boss. You can't win with you going berserk because of Joan. I feel he is doing it intentionally. You heard him disregard me like I am not good. That will be his downfall" Roy said.

He had heard enough, he needed to be out before they came out of the door. His mission for the day was successful. He would transfer his knowledge to Jason. There was no need listening to them because he could not even read their mind because there was nothing to read. None were thinking about what he wanted to know. He would connect to Bella later.

As he drove out of the club, he remembered that he was nowhere near winning the



game because Beast had almost lost his own game and his opponent did not lift a gun. If Halima had not accidentally found the evidence that they needed to nail Chief, Beast would have lost the game. His opponent had changed tactics after Ibe, a man who knew Beast had convinced them they could not win Beast in a fight. They had changed their plan of attacking Beast and had used the media which would have ended Beast. The game he was playing with Cloud was becoming more dangerous because they were now afraid of him, because they were no longer willing to go head to head with him, yet they were not ready to lose. Even his gift might not help him because Bella was right. Cloud was not thinking about his trafficking business the way he wanted him to and Roy was also not thinking about it, neither were they even thinking about how they planned to end him and most importantly, Cloud was not even aware of when the transaction with the new slaves would happen. Jason was the only card he had with him at the moment.

CHAPTER TWENTY TWO

(Memories can make you happy or sad or both)

If she had not heard what Cloud was planning for her, she would have almost



Edit with WPS Office

believed Cloud was sorry for mauling her. His face had been full of regrets and he was always with her, calling her sweet names and helping her take her food. At a point, she believed she did not hear him well, then she remembered Guardian, she remembered all her past, she remembered her name was Bella and Lara, she remembered her daughter that Guardian would never meet. She had no atom of doubt that Guardian would have accepted Lara as his own, she knew Guardian would have been the father Lara never had, he would have taken Lara as his but Lara was dead, she was murdered and she could not protect her. She wondered what Lara must have felt as that knife sliced through her throat. She knew Lara wouldn't have called for her. She was already afraid of her. She started crying.

"Lara I'm so sorry. I'm sorry" she repeated over and over again as she cried.

"Hey Joan. It's okay sweetheart. I'm sorry I should I have not been able to catch the culprit" Cloud said stopping her tears abruptly.

She had slept off and had woken up without opening her eyes. She had forgotten Cloud could still be around. She felt her body recoil from Cloud's touch and words. She wanted to rip him to shreds with her bare hands. Cloud had forced Lara to become an adult too early. On multiple occasions, he had whipped Lara instead of her because he did not want marks on her body and he also felt that was the best way to punish her. He never ended there, he would strip her naked and rape her in front of Lara. She had tried to stop looking at the horror on the girl's face after the second time Cloud had raped her in Lara's presence but Cloud had forced her to look at her daughter as he raped her. It was the worst kind of treatment.

She knew Cloud did not touch Lara because he was not a pedophilia. But Biggi was a pedophilia and if Cloud had not intervened, she could not imagine what that fat cow would have done to Lara. She started crying again when she remembered she had been high on drugs and alcohol when Lara had told her that Biggi pinched her nipples, she had beaten Lara but felt so guilty later in the day. She had begged Lara to forgive her which Lara had nodded but she knew the girl was already afraid of her. She had willingly seduced and given Cloud a blow job to beg Cloud to stop Biggi from sexually harassing her five years old daughter. She was at least satisfied Biggi was also killed.

"Joan, you will have a fever. Hey babe, open your eyes. Look at me" Cloud commanded. She opened her eyes and wished she could close it back. There was just one face she wanted to see.

"I understand your emotions are in over drive but you have to try and control it. I need you to get my faculty in place."

She recoiled immediately the meaning of his words hit her. She prayed he did not notice it but he did. She saw the anger in his eyes and waited for him to strike her but he did not, instead he kissed her forehead.

"Just get better, you don't fit in here" he said leaving the hospital room.

His actions were disturbing because she could almost read the true meaning to his actions. It was like he had made up his mind not to be disturbed with her reaction to him because he would not need it very soon. It was as if he was depending on her resistance in future which was soon. It made her panic. She tried to search for Guardian's presence

but she was empty increasing her panic. She could remember her past but she was still afraid Guardian was not real, she was still afraid that Guardian was not back. It was just impossible that after twenty two years of separation, Guardian had found her.

She remembered that last separation during the fire, she remembered Papa. She started panicking, Guardian did not tell her much about what happened. She had no idea if Papa and Guardian's Mum were still alive. His father also. It made her realize that Guardian was now the exact replica of his father. Although evil to the core, he was handsome and attractive. She was little but she remembered how his mistresses used to drool and fight over him. They always talked about his six packs and his force of nature. She never understood what they meant until now that she was remembering. She was not just remembering his father but Guardian himself. She started feeling hot as she remembered how Guardian had adored her body, how he had touched and claimed every part of her body and the way he made love to her. She could still feel him all over her. It was making her aroused and yearning for him.

"Please be real, please" she said.

Almost as if he heard her, she felt him. She was not expecting him, it took her by surprise that she felt the shock in her heart before the over excitement started.

'Guardian, you are real or am I hallucinating you?' She panicked.

'Ssh, I'm real. I won't be able to keep the connection for long. Just wanted to find out how you are doing.'

'They are planning to retreat and he is planning to make me a sex slave' she panicked.



He did not answer but she heard him discussing with Cloud. There was hope, she was going to meet Guardian the next day. She could not wait to be held in Guardian's safe and warm body, she could not wait to let him see all she had been through without him. She could not wait to make love to him over and over again, she wanted him to wash away everything Cloud did to her. She heard Cloud referring to her as Joan and got mad but Guardian pulled out making her panic again. She wished he would just stay with her forever. She had nothing to hide from him. But she knew it took his strength and he needed it. She would wait.

She felt him again making her squeal with excitement. She was glad no one was in the room with her.

"Same here, stop beating her because she prefers my body to yours. Let's hope there is no more home accident" she heard Guardian's clear warning to Cloud but she panicked and screamed when she heard a gunshot. Her screams were cut midway, like a force seized her voice. It was Guardian, he was doing it again. He was doing what he promised to never do to her. She remembered she had been scared when she knew Guardian could do anything with her. Guardian had explained that it could be a way he could use to protect her from danger but it did not stop her fears until Guardian had promised he would never take control of her which he kept but not the adult Guardian. In fact, she could somehow shut him out and regain control then, but it looked like that electrical connection had given Guardian total control of her because she wanted to seize it back but could not, it was as if she was an ant trying to push an elephant. She became pissed off.



'You know you will be termed mad and you will be delayed from meeting me?' she heard Guardian's voice in her head.

She instantly became relieved that he was alive, she forgot she was still supposed to be pissed off. He pulled out before she could lash at him that she was not a child and there was nobody with her.

The realization dawned on her that Cloud really fired at Guardian after she had calmed down. She remembered it was after Guardian had warned Cloud, but Guardian was still alive. He had seized her scream midway. She started relaxing.

"Get a grip lady" she said to herself.

Guardian was right. Her actions might make them delay her meeting with Guardian. She would die if she did not meet Guardian. In fact she did not know how she would be able to survive without Guardian till the next night.

Saro had discharged her after finding nothing wrong with her body apart from the few bite cuts on her neck, her ears, her shoulders and her breast. Cloud had raped her like an animal, even animals were not that terrible. Saro had recommended some drugs which Cloud took.

She knew there was nothing she would do to prevent Cloud from raping her as they got to Cloud's villa that morning but Cloud did not. He had dressed her wounds and plastered them. She did not understand the new Cloud. She wished Guardian was around, he would have been able to know what Cloud was thinking and planning because other than being told she was going to pleasure Guardian later in the night,



Cloud had not spoken anything serious around her. She had not even seen Roy and Olisa, it was just Saro and Cloud, not even a nurse.

Just when she was at least relieved Cloud would not touch her, he pulled her clothes off and she felt like throwing up as he took her. She felt so repulsive that she did not notice Cloud was not animalistic with her. He brought out a dope and shot her at her arm but she did not feel ecstatic instead she felt more terrible, like she was allergic to the drug. It was worse than feeling nausea. Guardian did something to her mind and body.

"You are mine Joan" he groaned as he invaded her. She still felt nauseated even after she had cleaned up.

She felt so dirty and guilty as Olisa dropped her at Guardian's place. She was surprised it was not Guardian who came for her. She was not even allowed to go to the club. She was taken to Guardian's place direct from Cloud's villa.

Olisa did not say a word to her, not even to tell her she should be ready at six in the morning. He just drove off as soon as she came down from the car. Before she could knock on the gate, it opened and she felt herself wrapped in Guardian's warm body.

She was supposed to be excited but she was not, she recoiled from him and started crying. She felt so dirty and guilty. She did not deserve his warmth. She felt him and tried to push him away but failed. He did not say anything to her, he pulled her with him to his house, to his room. He tried to lift her to the bed but she resisted.

"Bella..."



"Don't tell me it was just my flesh, don't tell me he raped me. I can't Guardian. I am so dirty and.."

He did not allow her to finish. He lifted her and placed her on the bed then joined her immediately. She tried to resist him as he wrapped her in him, as he made her rest on top of him but he held on. He did not say a word, he held on till she stopped resisting.

"Your cry is doing more harm to me than what he did to you. I am very sensitive to your feelings Bella. You are tearing my heart" he said.

Then he showed her the effect her tears was having on him. He was in pains. It made her stop crying.

'You don't need to express how you feel, I know Bella. I also know your body did not want him. I'm the guilty one. I am the one who let you go back Bella' he spoke to her mind.

That was when he struck her that she was back in Guardian's arms.

"Guardian, you are real. You are real. You came for me. You found me" she cried rubbing her palms on his face, his nose, his ears his shoulders then his chest.

"You are so big. I can comfortably use you as a bed. Your voice is beautiful, I like your body. I can't believe I am touching you" she said moving to his waist.

Her hand touched something hard sending a hot flame to her body. He groaned but she felt his desires more than the sound he made, it made her more consumed with lust. He pulled her to him and crashed his lips on hers. She opened up to him. She needed him like a drug, even more than shooting a dope. He stopped kissing her and tried to pull her



away.

"No" she protested.

'Sssh' he said in her head. He pulled off the ring from her index finger and put it on her wedding finger. Then he claimed her lips once again.

He continued kissing her, his rough and strong hands ravaging her body, sending hot flames down to her soul.

'Tell me what you want Bella' she heard him say, even his voice on her head was husky. She felt double pleasure and excitement because she was not just feeling hers but also his. It was exhilarating.

'Make love to me. Take away his touch from my body. Make me yours over and over again. Please I want you more than anything.'

He did not allow her finish before he lifted her gown. Within seconds, she was naked but Guardian had stopped. He was pissed. He was still connected to her and she did not need to ask to know what was wrong. She wanted to say something but she had no idea what to say. He pulled her to him and placed his hand on all her cuts. Every iota of pain disappeared. The injury was still there but there was no pain.

"I love you Bella, my brave queen" he said it out loud.

"I know that but please shut up and make love to me" she said claiming his lips.

She woke up feeling warmth and exhausted. She was on top of him and he was staring at her like the first time. No one spoke, they just starred at each other. She



grabbed his neck and he held her closer.

"I can't believe I survived twenty two years without you" she said.

He did not reply, he pulled her off him and made her face him. He held her neck and pulled her to him. He kissed her slowly, exploring her like he had all the time in the world which they did not. She had so many things she wanted to tell him.

'I know' he responded to her thoughts.

'I never knew I was supposed to remember him. I never knew he was protecting me when he took me very far from Lagos and changed my name. I remembered he was a bit shocked when I had asked him who he was but he had recovered quickly and told me he was my father. He told me I had an accident and I lost my memory as a result of the accident. I had asked for pictures but he said he was too busy to take pictures. There were no pictures of my childhood, of anything. No pictures of him. I was angry when he told me he was not my father. I did not allow him to explain. I..." she started crying.

She felt Guardian searching her memory. She allowed him to explore her past. She thought of so many events that she felt were turning points in her life. She thought of how she had come back to discover the hunter was dead, then she thought of how she had struggled to survive by selling vegetables and how they had all died after a year and she had no source of income and had to stop the village school. She was sixteen then but remembering that Guardian had corrected her age, it meant she was just fourteen. She wondered why the hunter had increased her age by two years.

'He was doing everything to protect you. Your name, your age was very important'



Guardian answered.

She nodded and continued thinking. She thought about how she had used her last money to start buying vegetables in wholesale and selling it as a retailer, then after another year, when she was fifteen, she had fallen sick. She could barely survive because she could not go to the market. A neighbor had somehow helped her and just when she had recovered, some group of people had come to claim the house and land and had driven her away. A neighbor had introduced her to a woman who could help her become a house help in the city. She remembered she had met the woman and she was sent to Owerri Imo state but she did not survive a year there because the man of the house kept making advances her way which she had refused. He had tried to rape her but she escaped and did not go back. She remembered she actually resisted the man not because she was moral but because her body kept recoiling from his touch. She had taken the little money she had earned as house help and travelled far away to Ibadan where houses were very cheap. She had started hawking anything hawkable, ranging from pure water, to gala and other snacks. Then when she was eighteen, although she thought she was twenty.

One of her regular customer, a female lecturer had asked her if she was interested in working as a receptionist in her brother's hostel at Ilesha. She had said the only qualification was to be beautiful and she was qualified. She had her doubts but she had accepted on the condition that she would go by herself. The worst that could happen would be the address turning out not to be a hotel and she would escape but it turned out to be a hotel and after she was trained on what to do, she became a receptionist. She had been asked to create a bank account but she opted to be paid with cash.



'One big reason I could not find you Bella. You were not in any data' Guardian said.

'But you wouldn't have recognised me.'

'I recognised you when I saw your pictures among the pictures two special force agents took.'

So that was how he found her. He had been searching for her. He would have found her if she had opened a bank account. If she had bought a SIM and registered it instead of buying an already registered SIM because she did not have the time to stand in a queue and her job was everyday apart from Sundays. She would have been found and she wouldn't have met Ade and she wouldn't have gotten pregnant and she wouldn't have given birth. She wouldn't have been kidnapped by Cloud, her daughter wouldn't have suffered, her daughter wouldn't have been brutally murdered. She started crying. Her heart ached as she cried.

"Bella..."

"Guardian you don't understand. I had a daughter she looked just like me. I did not love her. I blamed her for all the misfortune that befell me. I killed her" she cried, she did not only cry she showed Guardian the evil she became.

CHAPTER TWENTY THREE

(After playing the 'suspend' card without knowing you might have given your opponent who was supposed to go to 'general market' a card to play.....)

Her tears felt like millions of daggers piercing through his heart. It became worse because they were connected and he could feel she was drowning in self-guilt. He almost felt like telling her Lara was still alive and was being loved. But he could not. Bella was very easy to read by anyone. He was very sure her knowledge would ruin everything. She was already acting as if she was not aware of what Cloud was planning for her. Adding the fact that Lara was alive would be too much for her and Cloud would know something was off, not just off but seriously off. He had also made sure to close his thoughts to her because he did not want her to pick any sign of Lara in his thoughts because Lara was always in his thoughts. The fact that he got a wife and a daughter who was already five years old was always in his mind. The idea of being a father to such a beautiful soul was always in his inner mind but her mother was in pains.

'Bella, you act as if I can't read you, as if I don't know your mind. I know how you feel because I can also feel it' he spoke to her mind.

'I wish you met her, she look so much like me. I know you would have loved her. Cloud made her life hell on earth and I could not do anything. She suffered so much Guardian...'

He claimed her lips because he was lost at what to do. He felt molten fire run through his body immediately their lips connected. He would never get used to the sensation of tasting her lips. It was intoxicating and the fact that he could also feel her flaming



desires was turning his wild blood to liquid fire. He adored her with his lips, it told more than words or thoughts could express. She did not resist but she was still in deep sorrow. He would have loved to explore more of her body but there was no time except he wanted war. He pulled her to him and pulled her face to his shoulders. She grabbed his neck, her cry back to being audible. He used the fact that she could not see him to activate his watch. He opened the audio recorder and put it to play then spoke to her mind.

'Bella' he called pulling her to sit up.

'Look at me.' He placed his palms on her cheeks. She looked at him and the sorrow in her eyes almost choked him.

"I have seen it, the beatings where from the influence of drugs" he said out loud but she tried to shake her head, he refused and held strong.

"I know you also had a part in what happened to her, I won't lie to make you feel better but you should also know that I saw her image. I saw the times you apologized and I noticed she sincerely knew you were sorry."

"She did?"

"It's in there Bella, in your memory, the memory you showed me."

She listened because she started remembering times she had apologized to Lara and she saw it.

'Pause' he said to her mind.



She was remembering the time she had torn a drawing she drew of her and had beaten her for wasting her time drawing. Later she had apologized and Lara had hugged her as she cried.

"Can you see it now? She hugged you and cried with you. She believed what you said that it was the drugs. Children are one of the best judges of character."

She nodded but resumed her cry, she was even louder this time. He searched her mind to know what was making her cry.

'Stop it Bella, that's enough' he spoke to her mind.

'You did not meet her. I wished you came earlier, you would have met her. I'm sorry you missed her.'

'I have you Bella, for now that is what I'm focusing on. Listen to me. I need you to do something for me.'

'What?'

"Free yourself of your guilt Bella. Imagine I'm Lara and talk to me. It's a kind of therapy. It works. Tell Lara whatever you want to. Imagine she is listening to you" he spoke out loud.

"Okay."

"Are you ready?"

She nodded.



"You can start now."

He made sure everything she said from her heart were recorded. He felt relieved when she collapse on top of him.

"Why do I feel...I don't know, I feel..."

'Guilt free. You've poured out everything Bella. The universe listens. Let's hope your message will be relayed to Lara.'

He kissed her forehead and wrapped her in him.

"I want to visit Hunter Seyi, I want to talk to him. I want to beg him to forgive me for my ingratitude."

"Then we need to focus because we must get out of here alive before we can visit his grave."

She raised her head and he knew what she wanted to say before she said it.

'What happened?' she thought.

'Now is not the time Bella.'

'No please tell me? Please.'

He knew he would save more time by showing her and would lose time if he tried to convince her it was not yet time for her to know. So he showed her.

He had gone back to his father self-proclaimed palace using the back route. He knew a route he believed no one knew. The flame was almost everywhere except their cottage.



He was certain he was wasting his time, those who must have invaded the palace were long gone. But he still climbed the fence that would make him land behind their cottage.

He confirmed that the cottage was not aflame, only the main palace. The fire was at a stage where water would do nothing because the fire had already licked his way to the roof and the woods fueled the flame, illuminating the compound.

As he ran inside their cottage ignoring the litter of dead bodies outside the compound, he knew his father was dead. He just knew and also not just his father but he refused to believe his mother was among the dead. The door was opened. It had a short corridor that led to the parlor. The first sight before him made him pause. He was already afraid but it became worse when he saw the nanny lying sprawled on the floor with blood still sipping from a hole on her chest.

"Mum, he shouted."

He ran to his mum's room refusing to believe she was dead like his dad. But it was real. She was lying on the floor. A knife still stuck to her chest as blood ran down the floor. He was holding her hand in a jiffy. She was cold to touch, that was the day he knew death was cold in temperature. He noticed her clothes were rumpled, the top of her gown was looking torn almost like there was a struggle. Then he had no idea what caused the struggle but one thing was sure. She was not killed by a bullet and she was killed in closed range, stabbed by a knife, by someone who overpowered her.

"Mum" he called streams of tears already running down from his eyes.

"Mum, you promised to be around to teach me right from wrong. Mum why are you lying



down with smiles all over your face? Why? Why are you smiling? Are you happy you are now free? Free from me and my father? But I promised I will never become my father. I promised to set you free? Are you that happy to leave me? What about Bella? Mum, open your eyes and talk to me." But she was as still as a steel. Her mouth permanently drawn in form of a smile.

"Mum...." he screamed, his heart screamed along with him. He heard the glasses breaking and he felt the room shaking. He knew it was his emotions on display but he was not willing to stop. He screamed more and felt the house would crash on him but he did not care. His mum was dead. A captive from age fifteen who never got to be rescued. He had set everything in motion, he had set plans to end his father after his father had murdered his friend. He was planning to even take enough money and gold, then escape far away with his mum, Lara and Lara's father. Far from the west. He wanted his mum to taste freedom. He knew they would not so much look for them because they would be fighting for who would rule his father's kingdom. He had set things in motion. Before they would have discovered his father was dead, they would have been long gone. Hunter Seyi was already helping them plan their escape. His mum would live again, but just when he would have carried out his plan, just two days to freedom, she was lying on his arms dead. Her blood stained his knickers but he did not care.

"Mum I swear every one of them will pay, every single one of them will not die an easy death. Mum I'm so sorry. Sorry life was not good to you. Mum how do I cope? Mum" he screamed her name over and over again as the windows and roof pulled out and all the cottage shook from his anguish. He waited for the entire house to collapse on him and



his mum but then he remembered Bella. He gently placed his mum back on the floor and kissed her cheek.

"Mum don't forget me in heaven. I'm sorry but please continue smiling. I'm coming back to give your body a proper rest. I need to get Bella."

He kissed her forehead and ran out. He did not look back after he had climbed the fence. He ran like his life depended on getting to where he had hidden Bella because it did. He had stayed out too long and there was a dreadful feeling that Bella was in danger. His heart felt like he just leapt out of his body when he got there and discovered Bella was not there. He tasted dread and it was very bitter.

"Bella" he shouted. But there was no answer.

'She wouldn't have trailed far' he thought trying to connect to her but he got blank making him shake.

He did not have the time to comprehend his current situation because they were searching for him. Someone had said he saw him. He needed to escape because he would be useless dead.

He stopped the memory lane. Bella was crying and wiping off tears from his eyes.

"They are dead?"

It was a rhetorical question but he nodded. He wanted to show her how he hunted everyone involved but there was no time. He made sure she knew what he was thinking.

'You can tell me about that later but there is a problem Guardian.'



'I know Bella.'

'He wants to make me a sex slave. He wants to carry out his wild fantasy with me. He is using me to distract you. I don't think we will have up to six meetings. He won't allow it. I think he will retreat before the sixth meeting.'

'I also think so. It means we have less than four days to figure his retreat route, his trafficking customers and most importantly, the file containing the whereabouts of every single person he has trafficked. Any guess where it is? I can't tip him off I know he is a trafficker. It is dangerous because even suggesting it can make him destroy evidence since he will not be needing them and even if I arrest him there is no way he will remember all of them" he said out loud.

"There is place he keeps all the files of his transactions but that is all I know. I have no idea where it is. Roy deals more on computer stuffs and Olisa sometimes connect new customers to Cloud. He is like the middle man. It is also a way to protect Cloud making it look like Olisa is the trafficker but Cloud is the one who meets the sellers directly. In fact, he hardly meets the slaves, that is the work of Roy and Olisa. Roy is there to bug them or chain them so they can't escape, so they can monitor them and Olisa with Aboy and some of Cloud's securities samples them. They rape both boys and girls. Virgins are normally through the anus while none-virgins are ganged raped from all sides to find out how far they can last. Some die and their bodies are disposed off by another unit led by one of Cloud's childhood friends. That's his work."

But something was disturbing him as she spoke.

"I don't feel good about this."



"I don't understand" she said.

"Cloud knows you are aware of this. Cloud knows you somehow prefer me to him. Then he must know there is a high chance you may betray him to me" he said.

"Yes but he is planning to retreat and take me with him while you wait thinking Olisa is going to drop me for the sixth and last time and Cloud does not know we know he plans to retreat."

"I know."

"Then what's the issue here. You think he is going to maul me again?"

The sudden rage that took over him as she mentioned what Cloud did to her was too powerful to control.

"Calm down big man. Not now, keep the rage for later" she said kissing his chest.

He breathed in and out and felt a bit calm.

"He won't hit you again because you are his only chance to retreat" he answered.

"Then what?"

"He will not follow whatever he thinks you know. He is going to change everything you know including his meeting places."

"But you can read his mind."

"That's the big problem."

"I thought two boxes in exchange for me."



"Yes, but you will be the one taking the boxes to him."

She sat up.

"Is he aware..."

"No he is not aware but he is aware we are lethal and he is no match for me and I can sense danger because of what happened during the last meeting. Few hours before you were dropped here. Marvin, the guy who has been following me around brought a typed letter to me" he said pulling the letter from the table by the bed. Bella snatched the letter from him. She opened it and started reading.

"I don't waste words and I don't know how to act like I'm your friend because you will remain the enemy I dream of tearing to pieces. Meeting you is now dangerous because my hand has its own mind, and I know you still remember what happened. I give it to you. You are good. You are the first person I have met who can do that. Information on you says your unit's sixth sense is powerful. It does not change the fact that I can't stand the sight of you. I know our words carry weight hence we don't play with deals. I know you will keep to the deal. So I have changed the plan to prevent another episode like the other time. Give Joan the boxes and for the sixth time, the copy of the report you are going to make. With this, I won't see your fucking face. Make sure you keep to the deal or hell will visit earth. FUCK YOU" Bella read the last word shaking her head.

"He even typed the fuck you with capital letter" Bella said looking a bit scared.

"I have told you that word is banned in my unit."

"Can I ask why?"



"We have kids. We live together and kids are not supposed to speak that language. You need to start learning because it will soon become your new life. Except you have five thousand..."

He stopped talking because Olisa was around. He did not want her to go back.

"Guardian stop, you are making me lose my confidence" she pleaded as he held her from wearing her clothes.

Jason was yet to answer him. He had replied that he was still working. He had no card to play until Jason was ready.

"I can't bear another man touching my wife. I can't stand it."

"Me too. But except you have a better suggestion which does not involve you killing Cloud without having the files and records you need to track down all the trafficked slaves and his customers, then I have to go now. You have to let me go. I have to do something. I am right now their only hope" she said pulling away from him.

He did not raise his head to look at her, even after she kissed him showing him how much she loved him.

As soon as they left his compound, Bella with the two boxes, he disconnected and threw himself on the bed and roared. If his mum was alive she would tell him to pray, then he would ask her why God had not yet answered hers, he would ask her why God did not free her from his father. Then she would smile like he was asking a funny question.

"If God answered me, how would you have been born? If God did not answer me why do



you have a gift that will make you become a spotlight if the world knows about it? Every time I see you the name Moses comes to mind. I know you were born for a purpose and your gift will help many. God answered Ola. Your father is also God's child you know. If he repents today God will still forgive him because as long as he is still alive, grace is still available for him. It ends at death, his freewill that he is misusing will end once he dies. God did not kidnap me Ola, your father did and God is very much aware of my pains and I can't question why I am still here because His plans are to give me an expected end which may not be the end I want but the end he wants. We can do all the ifs in this world but it still boils down to the fact that you were born and if there is any doubt that you don't have a purpose, the fact that your father cannot kill you because he cannot get another heir and the fact that you are gifted kills any doubt. Some evils are punished immediately, while some are kept for judgment, others escape by receiving mercy from God but what I am very sure of is God heard all my prayers."

His mum was so sure about God and answers to prayers. He believed in his mum's belief because he was yet to find any reason to doubt it. He was still studying Daniel and researching to find out prophecies that were already fulfilled. It was scary that visions of Daniel which was thousands of years old happened accurately hundreds and thousands of years later and some were yet to be fulfilled. Daniel wrath so many exploits beyond human ability. His mum had said it was because Daniel understood the source of his gift and understood the purpose. His mum had said there was a purpose for his gift. She had also said Bella was not a coincidence, that she was also purposed.

"The day you understand that book is the day you will have all the answers you are looking for" his mum had always said.



As time passed and as he worked hard to synchronize the visions of Daniel, separating the fulfilled ones and yet to be fulfilled ones, he knew he would never be able to find answers to all the questions he had. Even Jason had started studying it but he had not gone near anywhere. His mum had also said that anytime things became complicated and hopeless, he should do what Daniel always did. He should pray. He had never prayed since his mum died, not that he no longer believed, he just did not have a very good reason to. He could handle everything with his gifts but at the moment, his gift needed more than luck because Cloud had not only given him suspension, he also gave him hold on and pick two.

CHAPTER TWENTY FOUR

(The definition of children and innocence and absolute trust)

It was Saturday and they were in their underground playhouse. She was still with Aunty Cindy but others were with their parents. George said he wanted her to stay permanently with them. She liked George because George always liked playing with her. He was the one teaching her how to operate a computer because Geoffrey would not talk but she was also okay with Geoffrey. They were all around apart from Aunty Halima and Aunty Cindy and Uncle Jason who had gone to work.

They had all worked in the garden and it was fun. Except for John uprooting the tomatoes and pepper, everything went fine. Puppy's legs were still broken. Uncle Jason



made a roller for him. It helped him to walk around without using his legs. Ella had been carried away by Ghost after they had finished working in the garden. They were always funny and making them laugh. The others had gone inside but they had gone to the underground house because they still needed to practice their fighting skills using their field room. They would have their bath and breakfast in their underground house.

Puppy was relaxing with his bandaged legs by John's favorite place. It was John who rolled his roller to the place and kissed his nose before following them to practice. She was still learning the basics of karate but Pearl said she was learning fast.

Dad had not called since on Sunday. She was missing him so badly. She was missing the warmth of Dad's hands. She had always prayed to God to give her a daddy because she always felt sad when other daddies used to carry their children to her school. Aunty Pat said God always answered prayers but not always exactly as people wanted like the story of Emily who wanted blue eyes but God did not answer her. Later, she was happy God did not answer her because her blue eyes would have prevented her from pretending she was an Indian. But she had prayed because she really needed a daddy, not the kind of daddies around their compound who used to beat their children all the time but the one that would love her. God did not only give her the best daddy, he also gave her the best uncles and aunties and siblings and friends and heaven. Their place looked like what she believed heaven would be like.

They finished their training, then went to take their bath using their personal rooms. Pearl had to bathe John and Al. GG said they could bathe themselves. She could bathe herself and even cook indomie noodles. Mum used to leave in the night and used to

come back the next morning looking angry and sad at the same time. She used to prepare indomie for herself. But breakfast was sandwich and tea which she helped Pearl prepare. The stuffs were too high for John's hand to reach but he was not even at the kitchen. He had gone to stay with Puppy. Al also helped, she helped to slice the tomatoes. Aunty Halima said she had to teach Al how to use the knife because she did not want Al to cut herself. Geoffrey kept monitoring Al's hand as she sliced her tomatoes. GG went to operate the computer after helping to slice the onions.

After eating, they went to watch Nickelodeon. They did not study on weekends. Uncle Jason said they needed to do other things apart from reading to exercise their brain. She had already drawn six animals in her drawing book. George always liked to draw with her and he was a very good learner.

They started showing a cartoon she did not like. She went to take her drawing book and called George to join her. Pearl was sitting on a black round chair close to the table. It was big and could spin round almost like the one in her room at Abuja, just that the one Pearl was sitting on was bigger. She was pressing her phone, spinning and laughing. That was after she had called her mum using her pink watch, she said it was her other mum who was in heaven. She said her voice was in her pink watch. As George joined her, Geoffrey went to meet John who was trying to fix a big dinosaur rubber puzzle. He started helping John fix the puzzle. Puppy's waist was on John's back almost like John was resting on him. She just did not understand the both, it was as if they were best friends.

"Al come join us" she called.

Al was sitting on Geoffrey's favorite couch watching the cartoon.

"No I want to arrange my room" Al said standing up.

She wanted to ask her how she alone would be able to do it but Al started calling her dad using her wrist watch. She just knew it must be her dad. She could not read but she could read her name, her dad and her mum's name.

"Dad I need help to arrange my room. I want to change everything. Did you hear?" she asked.

She heard Beast's very deep voice that George called a baritone, it was too far to know his response. Al cut the call.

"I will draw later. I want to make my room to look like... forget it" Al said going towards the passages that led to the rooms.

"Okay, it's just the two of us. What are we drawing?" George asked.

"A dog."

"Like puppy or the normal dog?"

"I don't know. Which one do you want?"

"Hmmm just draw anyone. I will follow you step by step. Geo don't you want to learn how to draw a dog?" George said to Geoffrey. He sometimes called him Geo but they could not call him Geo because it sounded like they were calling George. So it was George who called him Geo.



Geoffrey shook his head. He had already fixed the puzzle for John and John was lying down holding and tapping Puppy's waist like he was trying to calm him down. Puppy's eyes were closed. Geoffrey went to sit down on his couch. He reduced the volume of the TV and started operating his tab. That was what George called it. She started drawing a normal dog that did not have hairs like puppy. She started from its waist. She drew and George followed.

The entrance door opened almost same time they finished drawing and coloring the dog. George was going to join his brother on the couch with his tab. It was Beast and Wolf who came in. She turned when John did not rush to Wolf. He was already sleeping. Beast walked towards their rooms while Wolf went to meet Pearl who was backing him after smiling at her. She smiled back and started coloring some of her previous drawings.

She raised her head when she heard Pearl telling her dad to stop. Wolf had taken over her seat carrying her on his legs as he spun the chair. His hands were around her making her rest on his chest but he was trying to collect her phone.

"The fact that you don't want me to see what is making you blush is the reason I want to see it" Wolf said trying to snatch the phone but she pushed her hand the opposite way.

"Dad this is my privacy. Stop acting like an overprotective dad" Pearl said.

"I am an overprotective dad and you are my precious jewel. Let me see. Is it Jake?"

"Dad I don't know what you mean but do you know I am twelve?"

"That's the problem, you are too young to be blushing while chatting. Let me" Wolf said trying to take the phone but Pearl held on.

"Dad stop now. I am not blushing and it's my private life."

"Your private life begins at twenty."

Pearl started laughing.

"It's eighteen dad. Accountable age is eighteen."

"Great. Now that we agree, you should know you have six more years. Your phone sweetheart."

"You tricked me" Pearl said.

"I'm older than you young lady and I was once your age. If my children are going to be exactly like me, then I should be prepared to handle me."

"Then tell me" Pearl said.

"Tell you what?" Wolf asked spinning the chair fast making Pearl to relax on him as she giggled.

She wished Dad was around. They were making her miss Dad that she felt like crying.

"What terrible things did you do at twelve?"

"So you will do it and then tell me you are Mama's blessing."



"Don't worry, Mum already told me yours and her own deeds."

"What! Pearl what did Mena tell you?" Wolf was looking scared.

"Stuffs. We talk a lot about boys and crushes. Me, Mum, Aunty Cindy, Halima and Ella.

Mum told me almost everything you did at twelve."

"You have not said anything. What did she tell you?"

"Secrets."

"You can tell me. I promise not to tell her" Wolf said kissing Pearl's cheek. She missed Dad so much.

"I will if you promise not to check my phone. I don't feel comfortable with my dad checking my phone. It means you don't trust me."

"Hmm" Wolf said spinning the chair faster. He was acting like he was thinking about it.

"Deal. Tell me."

Pearl pulled Wolf's ears and started whispering. After some time, Wolf started laughing.

"Sssh, don't tell her I told you" Pearl said.

"I already knew that, although I was not sure because she said she will never tell me when she started crushing on me. I was right...."

Pearl covered his mouth.

"Dad, walls have ears. Lara and GG and John and Puppy will hear" Pearl said making her to look at what she was painting.



"Okay" Wolf said like he was whispering to Pearl making Pearl to laugh.

"I hope you know he is not supposed to know you are crushing?" Wolf asked.

"Beast told me and...." Pearl stopped and covered her mouth.

"Got you. So you are crushing on Jake."

"Dad you tricked me again" Pearl shouted standing up and walking to one of the couch which was close to her. She was looking angry. Wolf went to join her.

"So it's cool to talk about your crush with everybody but me?" Wolf asked sitting close to her.

"Yes because you are my dad. Ella said you will never allow me to have a crush. You will try to scare the innocent guy away because most overprotective dads do that. Don't scare Jake away. He does not know anything. I just like him cause he is cool and he can also fight very well. Is it bad I like talking with him?"

"That's all?" Wolf asked.

"What else?"

"Absolutely nothing else. As long as he is also not crushing on you, I won't intervene"

Wolf said smiling and raising his hands.

"But I want him to have a crush on me" Pearl protested.

"No pup, that's where I draw the line. No guy is allowed to have a crush on you till you are eighteen."

"Except for you?"

"Exactly" Wolf said standing up but Pearl held his shirt.

"Dad wait" she shouted pulling Wolf down and running to the table. She came back with three combs. Two with long tail and one big one. She gave one of the long comb to Wolf.

"What for?"

"My hair. Dad since you are home today, help me unbraid my hair."

Wolf looked at her like he did not know what to answer her.

"You are seriously not joking. You want me, Wolf to unbraid your hair. Never in my life..."

"Dad, dad dad, that is what I know you as not Wolf. Dad I want to unbraid my hair but Mum is doing the laundry. It will take time if I do it myself. Dad please" Pearl said looking all cute.

"I am Wolf. I fight and win and fight again. I don't do hair. You can't make me stoop so low sweetheart" Wolf said standing up.

He fixed the long comb on her all-back braided hair, then kissed her cheeks.

"I have some trainings to do before John wakes up. Love you."

He kissed her forehead and started walking away.

"Dad what if I show you?"

"Show me what?" Wolf asked turning to face her.



"My phone. I will let you see my chats. Pleaseeee."

Wolf placed his hands on his jaw like he was thinking about it. He came back and removed the comb from her hair, took her phone, sat down and pulled her to him.

"If Mama or Tegas or Teji or anybody hears about this, you are grounded for life" Wolf said.

"Thanks dad, you are the best" Pearl said kissing Wolf's cheek.

"So how do I unbraid it? It's looking complicated?" Wolf asked looking at her hair and looking confused. Pearl started laughing. She also started laughing because Wolf was putting the long comb at the center of her hair instead of the tip. She knew how to loose hairs.

"Lara come and help me" Wolf whispered to her but Pearl shook her head.

She quickly turned to her drawing.

"No dad, wait let me show you. It's like this" she heard Pearl but she did not raise her head to look.

She now knew what to draw next, she did not want to wait for the next day. She opened the next empty page of her drawing book and started drawing.

The door opened when she was almost through. It was Ella and Ghost and Fast and Mark. Fast was in front.



"Fast" she shouted running to him.

He swept her off her feet and gave her a bear hug. GG also ran to them.

"How is my Lara doing?" Fast asked kissing her cheek.

"I'm fine. I miss you" she shouted.

"Me too" Fast said dropping her on the ground to hug GG. Geoffrey was wearing his hand glove so it was okay.

Their screams woke John up. Mark also raised her up giving her a bear hug and kissing her forehead.

"I'm so happy to see you" she shouted.

"Me too" Mark said.

"Are you going to stay?" she asked.

"Yeah. We have some people to visit here tomorrow night" Mark said.

"Or early tomorrow morning" Fast said.

She did not understand Mark and Fast but she nodded.

Fast was spinning John fast and round as he squealed like he was not just waking up.

George said what John was doing was called squealing. After Fast, Mark took over.

"I am not going to say anything" Ghost was telling Wolf as she went back to her drawing.

Ella was laughing at Wolf.



"Please don't. Just go play with your wife. You can say something when you have little female Ghost, that's after twelve years" Wolf said to Ghost.

But Mark and Fast had joined the laughter.

"How are the mighty fallen? It was first Beast now even the legendary Wolf that soldiers dread to whisper his name is unbriading his daughter's hair. Odiegwu" Fast said.

"Fast, Mark, Ghost stop it. Leave my dad alone" Pearl said.

The hair was remaining just two braids to go. Her hair was so long and full and soft, unlike her own. Mum said her own was like sponge. Mum told her to cut her hair but she refused. The ones that used to cut their hair in her school looked like boys, she did not want to look like a boy. Mum said it was her headache.

"Pearl don't mind Fast and Mark. They are behaving like this because they are not married. They don't know the power of a woman. We rule" Ella said giving Pearl high five.

"Ghost keep acting like you don't unbraid my hair" Ella said punching Ghost.

"What?" Fast and Mark shouted looking at Ghost.

"You won't understand dudes. That's even different, that comes with something ho..something special after. It's part of...you know." All of them started laughing, including Wolf confusing her. Even Pearl was confused.

Mark went to the table with computers and started operating it.

"Get married Fast and you will understand but I will not allow you change the fact that Wolf, an urhobo man is unbriading his daughter's hair. It just took a little girl to control



the legend himself" Ghost said shaking his head.

"At least she is twelve we have the Beast himself. Al is just three" Fast said.

The laughter was not Only in the parlor but on TV.

"Dad" she screamed running to the TV which was pulling down. It touched the ground. It was as if there was a glass preventing her from being wrapped in Dad's warm hands.

"My love and princess. How are you? Dad is missing you so much" Dad said placing his hands on the screen. She placed her tiny hands on Dad's hand but the screen did not allow her to feel the warmth.

"I miss you more" she said.

"No I miss you more than you can ever miss me more and more." She started laughing.

"How is Mum?" she asked but Dad was not allowed to answer because the screens split into two, then three. Sabrina, Major and Grandma were on the screen but Major and Grandma were together.

"What am I hearing? Oh I'm seeing it. Unbelievable. Wolf, one of the wild creatures I could almost not handle is unbriading his daughter's hair. Wow" Major was so surprised.

She turned to look at Wolf. He was almost done with the last braid.

"This is real" Sabrina said.

"Ahmed I am happy I am alive to see this" Grandma said.

"Grandma" she shouted.



"My love, how are you? Grandma asked.

She answered and greeted all of them.

"A wolf is taking care of his pup. What is wrong with that?" Wolf asked combing her long hair.

"Pearl please we need to discuss. I want to know how you did it" Sabrina said.

"Just know I have great teachers" Pearl said.

"First Beast, now Wolf and I'm afraid I'm next" Dad said and they started laughing. But she did not know what was wrong with Dads loosening their daughter's hair.

The entrance door opened and Aunty Mena came inside. Wolf was already packing Pearl's hair to a pony tail.

"What did I miss?" Aunty Mena asked increasing their laughter.

"I will gist you later" Ella said to Mena.

"I have not seen my AI. Please where is AI?" Fast asked sitting down on the couch. He had gone to their kitchen and was with a tray of apples. He was already eating one.

"She is arranging her room" George answered.

"Why will a three year old arrange her room?" Mark asked rubbing puppy's back. He had been barking for them to greet him. Fast was the first to greet him.

"She played one game about arranging rooms and she want her room to look like the way she arranged it on Geo's tab" George answered.



Almost immediately, she saw one of the birds flying towards the corridor that would lead to their rooms.

"Then where is Beast?" Dad asked but no one needed to answer because the TV was now four. Geoffrey was operating his tab.

The fourth screen was showing Al and Beast in her room. She was hitting her hand on her face.

"Dad that is wrong too" Al said.

Beast was placing her big teddy bear close to the head of her pink bed.

"Then you tell me" Beast said with his baritone voice. Beast was like Dad in everything just that Dad was dark.

"It's not just Caro, you did not hang the flowers well and the table is not right, it is right and left."

"Okay, right and left" Beast said shifting her baby pink table."

"It's okay" Al said.

"Yes ma'am. So where should I place Caro?" Beast asked carrying the teddy bear.

"Turn it to look like she is sleeping."

"You say it not she" Beast said.

"No Caro is a girl. Don't you know?"

"No I don't."



"See. She has ribbon on her hair and she has a pink gown" Al said showing it to Beast.

"So that's why it is a girl?"

"No she is a girl."

"Okay Ma'am."

"What next?"

"Hmmm" Al said tapping her index finger on her lips.

"The bed" Al said.

"I thought we just changed the bed?" Beast asked.

"I want it opposite the table and chair."

"But that will make it look scattered."

"No it will not. You don't know anything about arranging rooms do you?"

"No. I don't and I don't need to because I am not into fashion. I only know how to fight"

Beast said.

"But I am teaching you" Al said.

"Yes I can see that but your room looks more scattered than before" Beast said.

"No it isn't. Mum will like it like this."

"Great so can I go? When mum comes back she can help you arrange it well and she will know which color of dress is needed for a particular color of teddy bear."



"No Mum is working. You are at home. Mum will rest when she comes back. I am teaching you dad. Now you know red teddy bear cannot wear pink dress."

"Because your mum said so?"

"Yes because mum is a fashion designer."

"Great, Mum knows, I don't know because I am not a fashion designer, I am a warrior."

"Warrior? No you are not. You are a soldier."

"And a warrior."

"They are not the same thing dad. Soldiers are not warrior."

"Says who?"

"Cartoon. Warriors are stronger than soldiers. They are superman."

"There is no superman."

"There is. Powerpuff girls and PJ masks are superman, they are warriors, they fight evil and save the world. Geoffrey used to download it for me. They show PJ Masks in DSTV."

"Well I am stronger than Puff girls..."

"It's Powerpuff girls dad."

"I am stronger than them and I also fight evil" Beast said shifting the bed to face the table.



"Because you can carry a bed? Powerpuff girls can carry a house. They are stronger than you dad."

"They are not real AI, they are cartoons."

"No they are cartoons and they are real. They will beat you and throw you away with one hand" AI shouted demonstrating with her hand.

They started laughing. She found herself also laughing. AI was still a baby.

"Then call them AI, let me beat them and show you that I am stronger than them."

"No I can't call them. I don't have their number. One day I will be strong like them."

"Sweetheart you are stronger than them already and they are not real."

"No they are real" AI shouted and started crying making Beast to look scared. Beast looked at them like he knew the bird was videoing him. He carried AI to him.

"No no, no. You know the rules, no crying. Dad hates tears. Dad is allergic to tears" Beast said rubbing her back.

"What should I do?" Beast asked but they were laughing at him.

"Powerpuff girls and others are real. They save the world every day" AI said sniffing.

"Okay Ma'am I heard you" Beast said kissing her cheek and cleaning her tears. She was so small on Beast's arms.

"So can we go back to arranging the room? No more tears please."

AI nodded but her watch started ringing before Beast could drop her. She picked it.



"Al it's Fast, leave Beast who does not know fashion and who wants to ruin your childhood. Come let's fly" Fast said.

"Fast" Al screamed.

"Yes? I am waiting. I want to leave."

"Dad Fast is around?" Al asked looking at Beast.

Beast nodded.

"Where are you?" Al asked.

"I'm here with you at the underground, waiting for you, except you don't want to fly with me" Fast said.

"No, wait for me" Al shouted pulling herself to the ground.

"Al won't you arrange your room again?" Beast asked.

"Bye dad, I want to fly with Fast. Fix it before I come back. Love you" Al said.

She started running out of the room. Beast placed his hands on his waist and started shaking his head. The fourth screen disappeared.

They started laughing, she joined them to laugh. Dad became the only one on TV.

"For real? Fast you are going to fly us?" George asked.

"Yes. Lara do you want to join?" Fast asked.

She nodded.



"How are you not scared? Don't you feel like you are going to crash and you will fall from up?" Ella asked.

"No. It's fun and Dad said I can trust Fast. I know he will never let me fall" she answered tearing her drawing.

She carried it to Wolf but was confused with the way they were looking at her like she said something she was not supposed to say. John was already climbing Wolf like Wolf was a tree. Wolf collected the drawing same time Fast came and lifted her and placed her on his back.

"Lara from this day I'm am now your second dad. You just won my heart hundred percent" Fast said spinning her round making her laugh.

"My heart is beating fast" Fast said facing Dad.

"I never thought it like that" Ella said.

"Because adult lives are complicated" Pearl said standing up. Wolf was still with her phone.

"Wow, Lara drew me and Pearl spinning on a chair" Wolf said.

The drawing was out of his hand before he even finished talking. It was being passed from hand to hand, even GG wanted to see it.

"Lara thanks but are you sure you are five?" Wolf asked making her to laugh. They kept saying wow to her drawing. She felt very happy.

AI rushed into the Parlor screaming Fast's name. Fast dropped her and raised AI up



before kissing her cheek and passing her over to Mark.

"I'm joining the flight" Ella said.

"Me too" Mena said,

"No space. Only the kids are allowed" Fast answered.

"It took a little girl to realize what you should have known from the start" Mark said.

"Before you go anywhere Lara. Mum has a message for you" Dad said.

"Okay" she said walking closer to the TV.

"But I think I should send it later..."

"No I want to hear it now" she protested.

After some seconds, she started hearing Mum's voice. Mum was crying

"Lara, I am sorry. I want you to know that it was never your fault, it was not because of you Lara. You are not the reason we were kidnapped. It was all Cloud. He kidnapped us because he can, not because of you. Every day, I wish you are still alive, I wish you are here. You have no idea who found me. Guardian has found me Lara. He came for me. Guardian is real, you were right. The guardian I used to call in my sleep is real. He lost me but he has found me. I'm sorry I did not treat you well. Can you please forgive me? I wish you met Guardian, he would have loved you and cherished you. You would have had the father every girl dream of having. I'm sorry, please forgive me. I promise to make Cloud pay for everything he did. I am going to live with Guardian but I will stay a little while so I can save many people Cloud kidnapped. I could not protect you but I am



going to make sure I protect those I can. Please forgive me. You look so much like me when I was small and guess what? I gave you my native name. You won't believe my name is Lara. I am so sorry. I'm sorry Lara."

The voice stopped. She was already crying. Mum did not know she was still alive. Mum did not know she had already met Guardian and he was the best dad in the world.

"Lara Mum is sorry and she will soon join you okay. Let's make it a surprise okay?" Dad said.

She nodded. She found herself being lifted. It was Beast.

"It's okay sweetheart. Stop crying. We will all make sure your mum, a true queen of the wild comes back and we will surprise her with you okay?" Beast said cleaning her tears.

She nodded.

"Dad will make sure he brings Mum back okay?" Dad said.

She nodded.

"Your mum is a very brave woman. She is a warrior I respect. I know Wild will not allow anything happen to her" Beast said.

She nodded. Dad started talking with Mark and Fast, they were saying something about trafficking but she did not understand. She just rested her head on Beast's chest. She felt safe, she did not just feel safe, she was very sure that Dad would beat Cloud and now Beast had said they would make sure Mum came home. Cloud would not even be able to fight Dad and now Beast and others had joined Dad. Cloud was now the antelope



and they would swallow him and all those bad men with him especially Olisa. She was now very sure Mum would soon come home.

CHAPTER TWENTY FIVE

(And then you look at the two cards your opponent made you pick...)

He wished he was the one holding Lara to him. He could not even help with her mother and she was also far away from him. She was resting on Beast's chest, her tiny hands trying to grab his neck. If he needed to get Bella out of Cloud's clutches as fast as possible, he needed to put all emotions aside and focus.

There was a big lead. Fast and Mark were in Benin tracking one of the Lebanese involved in human trafficking. He was there with his group to secure some kidnapped victims, most of them were those who would never be reported missing. Mark had said it was somehow difficult to understand them because they spoke in coded languages

and called their clients in numbers. There was a voice record of one of them discussing about Port Harcourt and that was all. They had no idea if they were going to be buyers or sellers.

He had instructed Mark and Fast to trail them and abstain from engaging if the victims were fifty except their life or mental health were in danger. But if they were very small numbers, he instructed them to engage and free all the captives. There would be no arrest. One could say arresting them would help know their customers and where the slaves they had gotten went to but they did not arrest, especially in this stage. This was because they already had the other two friends in their trail and killing the one at Benin was a form of a bait. People made a lot of mistakes when pushed to the wall. He would soon know the result of their mission, that would be later in the night when Bella would be around. Thinking of Bella was setting him off again. He disconnected the call after telling them what to do, after assuring Lara her mum would soon be home. He did not want to connect to Bella because he did not want to know anything that would make him lose his composure. If something was terribly wrong he would know.

He sent a message to Jason to find out what Jason had in stock. Jason was the only one not in the underground house. He was currently at Abuja house in his computer office.

'I can hack into Roy's data base with your help' Jason replied.

'How?'

'You are going to try hack into Roy's data.'



'Still how?'

'The cameras and devices Bella came with, did she take them back?'

'The earrings and the one on her jacket is still with me.'

'Good. If I am the one on ground I would have just hacked into it by activating it and waiting for their signals, then I will use my new programming language higher than python to enter their connection.'

'So?'

'You are going to do it?'

'How?'

'Hope you have the backup mini system?'

'Yes.'

'You can use any network of your choice. Connect the sensor to the system. Activate one of the cameras and place it on the sensor detector. Once signal is gotten, it will indicate in your system showing you the models and connection the camera signal is coming from, almost like when you switch your wi-fi on and it shows different wi-fis you can connect to. Click connect.'

'Okay, should I start or I should get all the instructions?'

'Start now.'

'A minute.'



As he went to get his gadgets, he just wished Jason could talk. It was better than communicating with messages. They were using their CIRCLE app and it was open for all to read. He brought the backup mini system and the sensor with the tag Flight 98. It looked like finger print device used to connect to a system but it had a different function from the device. It detected signals, especially bugs. Once a device was placed on it, the device appeared on the system, like someone trying to connect a Bluetooth player to a phone.

'Done. It has appeared and I want to connect.'

'Okay, do that.'

He connected to the device and it started loading. 'Waiting for connection' appeared after it had loaded. Then suddenly he knew he was being hacked.

'Are you monitoring it? Roy is hacking my system.'

'Yeah, let him. I will take over from here. Thank you.'

'Don't you think that will alert him more?'

'No, I know the devices he is using. I am not hacking, I am connecting, but in ghost form. He will never know.'

'He is deleting the files containing Stone's report.'

'I am seeing that. I am also taking note of his programming language. The guy is good. He is even a good match for Mark although Mark will beat him.'

'I thought he is match for Hacker.'



'No, he is better than Hacker.'

'That is not good to know.'

'You have me Wild.'

'That's why I have nothing to worry about.'

'That's right...and he has crashed your system. That was fast.'

'So what now?'

'I will know everything he has in his system, then if anyone plugs his phone, as long as it has Bluetooth, that phone will also have two owners. Then I will also be able to listen to any conversation in that room.'

'And you believe he will not know his system has been corrupted.'

'More like tapped. Yeah he won't know. He still has a long way to go. The fact that he does not know it was a trap and the fact that he is currently calling Olisa using the android phone he just unplugged from his system shows he is very happy about his achievement of stopping your failed attempt to hack his device.'

'I seriously don't know what to say.'

'Just connect your transmitter to the Circle App because you will have a lot to hear.'

'I am happy Ahmed saw you first.'

He did not reply for some few minutes. Just when he had thrown the damaged system to the trash, his phone blinked.



'Done. Everybody can tune in to Cloud's radio station. I have some gadgets to remodel. Contact me if you need anything and I wouldn't have let Cindy leave.'

'Wait, don't tell me you are monitoring my calls?'

But he did not answer. He was going to deal with that later. Damn Major for making him act human before his family. He just hoped it was Beast who told them and not Jason monitoring his calls because he was going to strike back. He would make Jason swim in fear for an hour.

At least there was something refreshing after so much darkness and loom. He brought out his transmitter and activated it.

"Roy you too much. You finish work. See as Cloud dey hail you." He had no idea who was talking but he was sure Roy just finish calling Cloud.

"You won't believe what the arrogant wild bastard said. He told me that I won't even qualify to join their team if technology was the only qualification."

"By now I know he will be crying. Hope you collected all the files before you crashed the system."

"Yes now. Those fucking soldiers really had some information but I don't think they knew about the main business although I am yet to check all the files. The ones I have opened are all about drugs." Roy replied who asked.

"This is promotion bros" the voice said.

"I know. I want to start work so I can report to Boss. He wants answers. Let me see



what leverage he has on Boss. Boss gave me two hours."

"Okay Roy. Let me go find Guinness for you."

He pulled out the device and set his alarm to two hours. There was a reason why it was known as backup system. It was not the main thing. Jason always made them to take it along because he might need it. The system contained reports of Stone but those he wanted Cloud to know. Roy would definitely find out that Stone and his comrade were investigating Cloud as a drug lord but Roy would never know about the report of Cloud being a human trafficker, and Roy would never see pictures of Bella. That was the main point of undercover. His undercover work was now opened for exploration because he did not come for Cloud because he was a drug lord but because he was a human trafficker and at the moment, his cover was not yet blown.

Although drug trafficking was a serious crime, concerning Cloud, he cared less about those intentionally harming themselves. Even the president was more interested in those who had been kidnapped and forced to do dubious things. That came first before drug trafficking.

He was completely game on and it was on all sides. He could connect to Bella and know what is going on around Cloud although he would not be able to read Cloud's mind. He would soon read everything Roy has and he would be with Roy anytime. At the moment, the answers to all the remaining puzzles was with time. He could not wait to meet Bella.

CHAPTER TWENTY SIX

(The issue is not about entering a dark tunnel, it is about getting trapped inside.)

She had expected him to pounce on her but he had not. He was not even around when Olisa dropped her at his lodge. Even Olisa did not talk to her, he just collected the boxes Wild had given her. He just escorted her to Cloud's room and left. She had wondered why he needed to escort her but she knew when she tried to open the door. It was locked, she had been locked in. She had taken her bath after eating the food that was waiting for her in the room.

There was no phone, no TV. Just a large room, that was bigger than some two bedroom flats. It had couches, a gigantic bed, a large wardrobe that was the size of a normal room, a large bathroom with large bath tub, then nothing else. No weapons, no drugs, no secret safe. She tried thinking of where Cloud could have stored his transaction files. Cloud had never spoken about it and she had never cared to know. She knew Cloud was a human trafficker, she knew Olisa, Aboy and now Roy used to taste some of the ladies whether virgins or not but that was all. She had never cared to know more and never tried to pay attention to Cloud's deals because she did not want to think of the horrible situations the victims were facing, because it reminded her that it could have been her, because she knew she could not help them but now she wished she had actually paid attention to them. It could also be because Cloud rarely met the victims,

he did the transactions directly with the traffickers after Olisa and Aboy and Roy must have checked them out. That was one big reason he would not be of much help to Wild. One thing she was sure of was Cloud did not keep all his files in one place because she had heard him talk about it.

She tried to rest but could not. She stood up and started searching the room. She kept her ears open for any sound at the door. As she searched his clothes and pushed every wall in the wardrobe, she thought about Guardian. She had so many questions she wanted to ask him. Although she now knew she was Bella, there was the fact that she was six when things fell apart. She would not be able to remember everything. She was supposed to feel sad that Papa was among the dead but she could not, it could be because it happened so long ago. Guardian had helped with her guilty feeling anytime she remembered Lara but she still felt that pang of pains, pains of loss. She would ask Guardian why he called her Bella instead of Lara.

There was nothing to indict Cloud. Even if there was something against Cloud he would have removed it long ago. They would never discuss anything with her around. Just thinking about what Cloud was planning for her made her feel chilly. It was worse because they had no idea how long they had to figure out where the slaves would be exchanged and how Cloud was planning to retreat. Guardian's gift was now useless because he would not be meeting with them. She hoped they were right about the five meetings because someone like Cloud would not allow the sixth meeting to happen, so no matter what, they just have three more meetings to stop Cloud and they had no lead

and no clue.

After she had combed everywhere with nothing to show for it, she went back to her bed but she became afraid when the door started opening. Cloud came in looking unreadable. The tension was high that she could hear her heartbeat. He did not say anything to her. He went straight to have a shower and came back few minutes later wearing fresh clothes. He went to one of the couches, sat down and stared at her.

"So you're now working for him?"

The question took her by surprise. She understood what he meant but did not understand how he knew except there were cameras and he knew what she did. She automatically shifted inside the bed. It was useless, she had nowhere to run if Cloud decided to pounce on her.

"What did he promise you? You chose him. You prefer him to me?"

She was shaking not because Cloud knew she was searching his stuff but because he was calm and in control. His voice too normal. Her teeth started chattering when Cloud stood up and walked to the bed. She shifted further in till her back hit the wall. He continued stalking her. She could see Cloud was drinking her fears, he was getting aroused by her fears. She wanted to say something but could not think of something to say. Cloud touched her cheek and she bit her lips to prevent her from pushing his cold icy hand away.

"Tell me, is he better than me? Did he take you to paradise? You enjoyed it right? You can't wait to go back to him because he gives you what I can never give you? How much



of me have you told him? Did you find what you were searching for?" He held her blouse and ripped it off her body.

"You dirty whore. I guess you want more of this" Cloud said rubbing his hardness which was straining through his trousers.

"Please" she said. She had no idea what she was begging for.

"Since you begged for it, who am I to deny you."

He ripped off her remaining clothing and without mercy he took her body. He took what did not belong to him. She wished she could run away from her body, from the sounds of Clouds bestial invasions and groaning. She wished Guardian would come, she wished Guardian would take her away from reality. Her last wished came through but it felt so wrong. It felt horrible for Guardian to even know what was happening to her body. If she was feeling so terrible, then Guardian would feel worse. She could sense his wildness, he was like a roaring lion trying to defend his territory against an invader. But that was not what broke her, he was in pains. She remembered, she remembered he could shut her out from knowing his mind but somehow his pain was too massive that she could feel a bit of it. What man would be happy his wife was sleeping with another man in his presence?

'You are not sleeping with him Bella. Close your eyes let me take you away.'

But even his voice in her head was sounding like an injured wild animal. It broke her in pieces, Cloud should have been through but he was taking his time. He was rubbing his hands on her breast...



'Bella stop blocking me, let me' she heard Guardian.

But she could not, she closed her eyes and imagined Guardian out of her head. She put enough emotion in it and it worked. She had kicked Guardian out. He would have still been witnessing what was being done to her. She would have been the only one safe. She could not let it happen. She shouldn't have wished for him, she shouldn't have allowed him see her in her state. She felt so dirty. She felt a bit relieved when Cloud got off her. He left the bed after kissing her ruthlessly. He did not say anything to her. He just wore another clothe from the wardrobe and left the room. She ran to the bathroom and scrubbed herself. She wept as she tried to remove Cloud from her body. There was no way to clean what he had dumped inside her. There was no way she would allow Guardian to touch her again. She was being cruel to him.

She could not climb the bed, she sat down on the tiles, her towel still wrapped around her waist, her hands on her head which was resting on her raised knees and she wept.

She felt him again and tried to fight him off but Guardian was stronger than her.

'Please, you can't see me like this' she pleaded.

'Why did you push me away?'

'I can't let you witness your wife having sex with...'

'Stop it Bella, just stop it. Don't ever do that to me again. I put you in this. All my comrades are saying they wouldn't have let you go back whether you wanted it or not. I sent you out. I'm responsible.' Guardian's voice in her head was too emotional. They



were both emotional wrecks.

'I'm sorry you have to see that, I felt your hurt, your pain. I'm sorry I'm sharing...'

'Bella.'

'I can't do this anymore. I can't allow you suffer like this' she cried more.

'Bella my pain is due to your pain, your guilt is what is hurting me more. You are destroying me with your tears, it's what is tearing my heart to pieces because I can feel your deep sorrow. Please help me.'

She felt someone was holding her to a warm body. It was making her whole but she did not want the feeling, she did not deserve the feeling. She mentally pulled away, then shut him out of her mind. This might be what she had to go through to pay for all her sins. She cried for a long time, sometimes she felt him but she pushed him away. Her determination to keep him out of her dirt was overpowering his will to invade her mind.

She did not know she had slept off on the tile with her towel still wrapped on her body until she was woken up by Cloud. She tried to stand up but felt a heavy bang on her head. Cloud held her before she could fall.

"You are burning Joan" Cloud said causing a new wave of fear and panic.

She had ruined everything, she would never be allowed to meet Guardian today. The fear disappeared within seconds because it was okay. She was not yet ready to face Guardian.

"And you are terribly shaking. Why will you lie down on the cold tiles just after taking



your bath?" Cloud asked placing her on the bed. He left to the wardrobe and came back with her longest gown which could not touch her knees. He wore it on her and wrapped her up in a heavy blanket. He made her to lie on the bed then left the room but came back few minutes later.

He touched her neck and shook his head.

"What the fuck happened within the period I left? You were okay before I left?"

She had no answer to his questions. All she knew was she was feeling headache and feverish and the blanket was not enough.

Someone knocked at the door. Cloud went to open it. He retrieved something from the person at the door. It was drugs. Cloud went to the fridge and came out with a bottle of water.

He gave her the drugs after opening it. She took it and drank without asking questions.

"Is it because of the dopes I have not given you?"

It made her realize she had not taken her dopes yet, she had missed it many times. She did not know what to answer him.

"He has a lot of dopes. I know you Joan. You can't survive a day without them. He must have been giving you more than enough. Did you insufflate? Is that what he promised you?"

She also did not have an answer.

"You don't need to answer me. You can be dumb all you want. I would not need your



voice to have another enticing pleasure later. You will soon talk of your own free will. But just know you are not going to ruin my deal with Wild. Your plan to get sick will not work. Olisa is coming to pick you soon. Get your ass up and dress up. You have five minutes" Cloud said walking out of the room. She had to use both her strength and will to come down from the bed and dress up. She was still going to face Guardian. She knew the fever would be gone once Guardian got a hold of her but her heart would never be healed.

Cloud's action had just confirmed so many things. Cloud had just few days before he would retreat. They were right, Cloud would not allow the sixth meeting to happen.

CHAPTER TWENTY SEVEN

(Sometimes being an expert is not enough, you may need help from unexpected source- Wild)

There was no word he could use to explain the terrible pain in his chest. Bella had just made him to discover their connection also gave her the power to resist his intrusion and it look like he could not overpower her will when she was emotionally down. And she was in the highest and most dangerous state of depression. He was



worried it could affect her health and he might not be able to meet her. That would entirely ruin everything because there was no way he was not going to see Bella this night. The mission was taking his toll on him. He might not survive the damage Cloud was unknowingly doing to him. There had been nothing newsworthy from Roy. He had instructed Jason to tag some words that would alert him anytime time it was mentioned. Until then, he had no time to be listening to irrelevant things. He had a bigger issue which was Bella.

He checked the time and discovered it was already past the time Olisa was supposed to drop Bella, he was becoming agitated, something he had never felt before. He felt relieved when he felt her presence.

He was there in time to open the gate and to pull her to him but she fought him both mentally and physically.

"Please don't touch me, I'm so dirty" she cried fighting to pull out from his grip slicing his heart with each resistance.

Amidst her struggle, he easily overpowered her physically and carried her to the house, to his room, to his bed. Before she could come down from the bed, he joined her and pulled her to him but she started fighting him. He had already noticed she was running temperature.

"You are not getting me are you? Guardian please let me be. I can stay in the parlor until Olisa comes for me. I am not fit for you" she cried.



He tried to kiss her but she turned her face from him and started fighting him again. It was too much. He connected them using force. He tried to shield her from the pain of his forceful intrusion but could not, one reason he hated doing that to her but there was no other way. The moment he connected to her, he was hit square by her thoughts. She was even thinking of committing suicide when everything had ended. She felt she was not good enough for him and would never be. Her conviction on being dirty was undoing him.

'Bella, don't do this to me. Come back to me. You said it was just the flesh remember?'

But she did not respond, she was way too gone with self-guilt. He laid down on the bed and made her to rest on top of him. She was now thinking about how useless she was as a mum and now she was a prostitute as a wife. He was a psychologist, he had done so many debriefings but the most difficult had always been those with self-guilt. Bella's case was worse because he could almost not do anything about her emotions and she was blocking him from helping by refusing to acknowledge him. He knew the only way to help her would be to hear an outsider tell her what he or she thought of her.

He picked his phone from the table close to the bed and called Beast. He picked at first ring.

"Obinna I need your help."

"Your voice says it all. Wild you sound a mess. What the heck is going on?"

"Help me talk to Bella, she is wallowing from self-guilt. I don't think I need to explain that to you."



There was a pause for some seconds.

"The fact that you are still normal and you can still reason like a normal person is what is baffling me. Is this not too much? I don't even know if this is morally and religiously right. I can't imagine Halima with another man" Beast said.

"Thanks for your help, but that's not the help I am asking, can we go back to that?"

If only Beast knew he was half mad, and he was almost way past endurance. He wondered what his mum would have done.

"Can she hear me?"

"Just some seconds."

He raised her up and sat her close to him. She looked like a rag doll with no life. He cut off their connection but she still did not respond to his action.

"Bella my friend wants to speak with you" but she did not answer. He had put the phone on loudspeaker and Beast could also hear him.

"Bella, look at me."

There was still no response.

"Hello Bella" Beast called.

That caught her attention a bit but not the way he wanted because she did not answer Beast.

"Daddy we are back. Fast and Mark have left. Where are you?" Al shouted in the



background. If he were to guess, Beast was in the room and Al was down in the parlor and Beast's phone was on speaker.

"Princess I'm up here" Beast answered.

"I want to tell you where Fast fly us to."

"It's flew not fly" Beast corrected. From the sound in the background, Beast was walking.

"Okay but are you coming?" Al asked.

"Yes princess."

There was silence for some seconds, then he started hearing TV noises.

"Dad, it's playing, come and see them. Powerpuff girls" Al screamed excitedly.

"Somebody should help me. Wild" Beast called.

He started laughing without even being aware he was laughing but he suddenly paused.

Bella was laughing. She was back. He was owing Al big time.

From the sound from the background, Beast was now in the parlor.

"Yeah, dad see, she is carrying a car. They are fighting this evil man." He just knew Al was jumping from excitement.

"I don't understand, this is not DSTV" Beast said.

"I know, Fast bought the DVD and it is playing. I know how to play it. Fast is the best."

"I am going to kill Fast" Beast said increasing their laughter.



"No you are not, he is the best with cartoons about warriors. Up powerpuff girls. Yeah, see that's Bubbles, she can carry a house."

"I thought you said you want to tell me where Fast flew you and your siblings to?"

"Not now dad. Sit down first, let's watch powerpuff girls."

And he just knew Al must be pulling or rather pushing Beast to a chair.

"Princess, if they are that strong why are they three fighting one man?"

"Because they are small, and the man is very big like you."

"No Al, you can't use an evil person to compare me with."

"You are not understanding are you?" Al asked.

"No" Beast answered.

"Okay, see let me explain...."

"Al, all I won't to do with my free time is play with you, do stuffs we always do, play with mum. I want to carry you and will we swim, we will practice...."

"Dad you need to try stop carrying me. I'm now a big girl and you need to know about super heroes and warriors. You need to know that soldiers and warriors are not the same. You are a soldier not a warrior. Warriors save the world, they don't wear uniform, they wear capes like PJ masks and clothes like powerpuff girls. Wild said ignorance is no excuse, he said we must know rules and follow it because.. because...forget it. Just allow me to explain what they do as you watch."

Bella's laughter was so intoxicating. Al was a handful. Tough luck for Beast. He would never be able to get away from his blunder about warriors and soldiers to a superman believing little cute daughter. And the fact that Al had not called him meant Beast was using a transmitter to communicate.

"So let me get it, you are saying I am just a soldier not a warrior?"

"Yes."

"Then what do soldiers do?" Beast asked.

"Soldiers wear uniform, they march, they salute."

"That's all?" Beast asked.

"They also fight."

"That's correct Al, it means soldiers are also warriors."

"No dad, how do I make you understand the difference. See soldiers fight for the people but warriors save the world."

"I also save the world when I fight to protect people from getting hurt by evil men."

"Yes, you are now you getting it. You protect people but you don't save the world. Warriors save the world from evil people who want to destroy it. If they don't, the world will be destroyed by evil people, then soldiers cannot protect people anymore, because there is nobody to protect. But don't worry soldier man, powerpuff girls and PJ Mask will always save the world so that you can protect people okay?"



"Okay" Beast answered conceding defeat.

"So let me tell you about powerpuff girls, you are learning fast dad."

"Oh no, somebody help me. Wild I know I'm on a little break but is there nothing else? My current mission has been compromised. I repeat, mission has been compromise. I need backup immediately, over" Beast said making Bella's laughter to increase because from Beast's voice, he was serious and sounding so screwed and clueless on what to do.

"Wild? Why are you calling Wild? Is he here?" Al asked.

"Remove the transmitter and leave your phone on loudspeaker, you clueless father" he said.

"Yes, I'm talking to him on phone. Say hi" Beast said.

"Wild when are you coming back? I am missing you" Al shouted.

"Me too sweetheart. Did dad say he is a warrior?" he asked.

"Yes but he is not."

"Don't mind dad. He is a soldier who cannot lift a house."

"I have been trying to tell him."

"Continue telling him and make sure he watches powerpuff girls and PJ masks okay?"

"Yes" Al shouted.

"Thank you Ola, your turn is coming" Beast said.



"You are welcome" he said.

"Al, dad wants to do something upstairs. When he comes back make sure you teach him more about warriors okay?" he continued.

"Okay."

"I love you Al" he said.

"I love you Wild" Al said.

"Beast" he called.

"What makes you think I will still help you out?" Beast asked.

"Cause you will not punish her cause of me. I know you are planning something but not her."

There was just the sound of the TV and which later reduced and stopped.

"Hi Bella" Beast called.

"Hi" Bella responded shyly. It was turning him on.

She looked so innocent, like someone who needed a cuddle. He could not resist pulling her to him and he was happy she did not resist him. Al had done what he could not do within minutes.

"Ola has been my friend for over nineteen years now and you will be surprise I got to fully know about you not long ago. I also read reports of the Special Force Agents about you being a suspect because of the way you acted outside. But everything changed



when Ola called me few days ago to tell me the bold thing you did. I can tell you that you have not just earned my respect but everyone. I had to tell others to find out their opinions and guess what? Halima, my wife told me that they are, that is the women in this family are already calling you our queen. There is no woman who is better fit for the position you are currently occupying. It's not only because you deserve it but because you earned it hundred percent. You should be here in our fortress enjoying life to its fullest but you chose to go back, you chose captivity to freedom so others can be freed. Halima is yet to understand your bravery because she was a captive and a sex slave for more than fourteen years before fate led me to her. They can't wait to meet you Bella. Although all the men in this family are rulers in their own rights, there is always the topmost ruler, the overall and he is the man beside you, every one of us see him as our leader and no one wants to take over and for a ruler of rulers, he needs a queen who can rule beside him. On behalf of the circle family, you Bella is more than worthy to be our queen and I can't wait to see you, we all can't wait and just know that we are all at your beck and call. I personally will literally break down walls to get to you if the need be. Don't allow Cloud get to you, don't listen to him, just keep thinking of those who are waiting for you to come home."

Bella started crying but he did not stop her, he allowed her to cry. He also wondered where Halima went to because she would have added fun to everything.

"Thank you" he said to Beast.

"No thanks. You and Fast are going to pay for ruining my time out" Beast said and Bella changed from crying to laughter.



"That's the spirit Bella. No matter what is going on just know Al is just one out of six kids waiting to give you all the troubles and arguments" Beast said.

And she had no idea Lara was part of them. It made him realize he was lucky Al did not mention her. He would have had a lot of explanation to give.

"Thank you sir..."

"Beast, call me Beast not sir. We don't say that here."

"Thank you Beast, thank you. It means a lot to me. You have just fueled me up and I promise I am not a suspect."

"Of course you we all know that. You are like puff girls."

"It's powerpuff girls Beast?" he corrected.

"Get out of my phone" Beast said cutting the call.

Bella was just laughing, then she started crying.

"What now?" he asked because her tears was not the good one.

He connected back to her and he was glad when she did not resist him. She was crying because of Lara. She wished Lara was alive. He wished he could tell her Lara was part of the six children. He laid on the bed and pulled her to him.

"Bella please stop. I know Bella but you can't continue dwelling on the past."

He rubbed her back and was relieved when she started calming down.

"What happened to his wife?"



"That is a long story for later, when we've gone back home."

"Can I see her?" she asked.

"See who?" he asked.

"Al, will it..."

"No, my cover is already blown to you. I won't show or tell you what would put you in more danger but it's okay if you want to see her."

He brought out his phone, opened his gallery and showed her the picture of Al on Beast's shoulders.

"Oh my God. She looks eatable, so cute. I feel like stealing her from him. I guess she will be like three or almost three."

"She is three."

"And Beast is big like you. I don't need anyone to tell me that this huge man adores his daughter."

"Even more than you can imagine. They are inseparable."

"But how come he does not know about her cartoons?" she asked laughing.

"Because they did many other things anytime he is around. Time is precious to them you know. She is already learning mechanics of a car. She can fight, she can swim. She knows some things about plants and she can set a trap although she can't make her equipment but she can set the trap and so many others. Dad's time out from the horrors



of evil is to play and learn and bond with Al and Halima and others. Cartoon was not needed cause there was not that much time until recently when Beast told her cartoons are not real."

Bella started laughing, it was healing the pains in his heart.

He took the phone from her and made her rest her head on his chest. The contact was giving his second another idea and it was becoming painful but he could not. Bella's mind was still recovering and he would not be making love to her until they were back home. That was what she wanted. Her body was already reacting to their closeness but her mind still needed a lot of healing. It made her feel like she was a whore.

He massaged her hair as she relaxed on him.

"Guardian" she called after some minutes.

"Yes?"

"How old am I?"

"Twenty eight. You should know, you have your memories back."

"I just wanted to be sure. After you said I was six when I got lost I calculated and thought I was twenty seven but after I regained my memory, it dawned on me that I became twenty eight a month ago."

"Yes. You missed your birthday but we can celebrate it when we get home."

"That word is making me excited."



"Trust me when I say the experience itself is going to be an electrified excitement."

He started massaging her shoulders.

"I will be holding on to that. But why were you calling me Lara, then changed later to Bella?"

"Bella you need to know that you have all your memories back."

"But I can't remember that one."

"Think" he said.

After some seconds she started laughing.

"Yeah, you remember now."

She had stopped him from calling her Lara because it was too local, she wanted to be called by her English name after reading Alice in Wonderland for the first time. She wanted to be like Alice and have her adventures.

"That story was really intriguing. I just felt... I don't know. But I love hearing Bella more than Lara."

"I also prefer Bella to Lara."

She did not speak for some time but he could sense she was worried. She was thinking of falling into a rabbit hole like Alice and getting trapped forever.

'I won't let that happen" he said to her mind.

'So do you have plans? I am now very sure Cloud will not allow the sixth meeting. This



means we have just two days Guardian. I searched the room but there was nothing.”

“Of course there would be nothing. What were you expecting to see?”

“So what are you going to do? We can’t let Cloud get away and we can’t let those captives remain in bondage plus the new ones.”

“I’m on it.”

“How?”

“This is the part where I can’t tell you. Just relax. Your temperature is back to normal. All I want you to do now is sleep.”

“But something down, located in your body is saying otherwise” she said.

“Just sleep, don’t worry about that. Whatever goes up will come down. I just...”

She claimed his lips stopping his speech. He did not stop her, he let her take the lead.

He did not also pull her back when she pulled out. He was in her mind and he had heard her thinking she was a whore.

‘You are not a prostitute’ he spoke to her mind.

‘I know but it feels wrong.. I want to Guardian, my body is screaming for you but my mind is...’

“Sssh, relax. Bella you need to rest. You trying to explain this to me is funny. Just sleep, sleep on Guardian.”

He tapped her back as she relaxed on him. Soon she was sleeping deeply.



His phone blinked twice and vibrated. The Circle were online. He took his phone to find out what was going on. It was after he had opened the app he remembered Mark and Fast had a mission. It was already 4:30, Sunday morning.

The first thing he saw was someone being hit by arrow which was actually fired from an equipment looking like a gun, the work of all of them but mostly Jason. The force from firing the arrow made the full poisonous head to pierce through bones on impact, killing the target instantly or few seconds later. It was being released on armed men who were still struggling to make their gun work. They were no match for Fast and Mark. One thing he was sure of was the captives were not up to fifty but he was wrong because after all the targets had been neutralized which was within five minutes, the bird entered where the captives were placed. He did not count but he was sure they were up to hundred captives.

CHAPTER TWENTY EIGHT

(The feeling is there, something very important but yet far from reach)

He was not the only one confused, he just knew something was not right.

Although Bella had said that Cloud was expecting fifty captives, it was clearly not so except their captors were not linked to Cloud. He quickly connected his transmitter to his phone and the app.

“Situation report, over” he said.

“All targets have been neutralized” Mark said but he could see that the targets have been neutralized, it was not what he wanted to know.

“Was my command followed? Over.”

“Yes, do not engage if they are more than twenty except the captives are in danger. Over” Fast said.

From the visuals on his phone, they were yet to enter the room filled with captives physically shaking from dread, they were yet to know their fate. He was not physically there so there was no way he could read them or study the waves coming from them but by just looking through his phone, he knew they were all aware there had been a battle but they had no idea if they were safe. They were cramped in a large room, each chained to another through their legs, reminding him of slave stories he had read. This was modern day slavery. He could see women and men and boys and girls and even kids. He could also feel a tear drop coming out of his eyes.



"So the captives were in danger?" he asked.

"Yes. We were on time to save two from being butchered alive. They were almost about to start extracting their organs but we could not save one male. A gruesome sight. I am going to sleep in a big bed at the underground house surrounded by our babies, I need to wipe out the image I saw from my eyes" Mark said.

"Make it two" Fast said.

"So now we have no idea if they were Cloud's customers?" he asked.

"Yes we do" Mark and Fast answered.

"Negative or positive?" he asked.

"Positive, I'm with a paper they used to mark out the number of captives to be slaughtered, the ones to be sold and to whom. There is one they named client A with Port Harcourt as destination" Mark said.

"I need to confirm your location" he said.

"We are not exactly in Benin, it's a village near Benin. The surprising thing is they are not in a dilapidated building or abandoned building. It's a big compound looking like responsible people live there. I guess they take their captives in at night and the walls are soundproofed. It is what we call hiding in the open."

"Any idea who owns the house?"

"Not really but I will look into it" Mark said.



"Why is everybody silent?" he asked.

"Everybody is busy, if you know you know" Fast said. He was trying to lighten up the mood but it did not work.

"Doc is also busy?" he asked.

"When I'm not around? Busy with who?" Mark said.

"I would have wanted to know their opinion on what to do."

"But at the end it is mostly your call. You are the leader. What do you want us to do with them? Call the police?" Fast asked.

"That can be a problem" Doc said. She had joined them.

"If the police comes, it will become news and Cloud will know. I don't think that will help your course. You need evidence against Cloud to get a bounty on him" Doc said.

"Right now we don't have any idea if Cloud is aware of the date and venue" he said.

"From the paper, it is day after tomorrow and the meeting place is bonny River" Mark said.

"I think Cloud already knows about the date cause it's close but not sure about the venue" Fast said.

"Okay, so if we are assuming what Fast said, it means we have two scenarios. One is you call the police, it becomes news, Cloud will know and retreat early which will prevent me from having evidence against him for a crackdown. Two is to keep this out of the



media but it also means they will remain in captivity and I'm not vying for that, there is a limit I can go" he said.

"So we call the police, it becomes news and Cloud attempts fleeing, then you attempt to stop him and there will be a shootout because you already have the evidence that he is into drugs. But if he dies, those he sold captives to will never be found and the captives will never be rescued because the file will be lost. So except you can see that information, you cannot kill Cloud" Doc said.

"Then let's call the police and make sure it does not go to the media. That should give you a day to figure out the file, that is assuming Cloud is not aware of the venue because if he is aware, then you have exactly two days" Mark said.

"Do that, contact Major to contact the IG of police and give him the situation reports. I will plan towards a day. Jason already have their computer and phone. There was nothing incriminating in the laptop but they are being monitored. Over and out."

He disconnected with millions of thoughts running through his head. He thought about the first day he entered Cloud's club, he went through the events of that first meeting and wondered if he had started with the wrong card. What if he had not given himself away? What if he had been fully undercover from the start? Would things had played out differently? Bella being the ultimate price of the game, though he was on a mission, was behind the way he played his first card. But there was the fact that he wouldn't had fit into any other profile because his size, his voice and the waves that came out of him, that usually put people like Cloud on the edge would have prevented him from being something else. There was no way Cloud would have believed him. The



only good card at the table was the fact that they could listen to them. His real system was yet to alert him on their plans and it was somehow disturbing him. He made up his mind that if nothing showed up from them, he would visit the club and find a way to make Cloud think of his customers and were he had hidden his various transaction. He knew it could make Cloud to panic, leading him to do stupid things but that might be the only way because it was not about killing Cloud, it was more about the captives who needed to be freed. At least the fifty Bella was already suffering for were already free but there was still the lingering feeling that something was wrong. The neutralized traffickers never mentioned Cloud, they only listed him as client A and listed it as Port Harcourt. There could be more than Cloud in the trafficking business. He shook his head, they were the ones Cloud was expecting, he knew it but still felt disturbed. The disturbance had started even before he opened the Circle app. It was about the number fifty, something was wrong with that number. Cloud had said he already had buyers. He was not doubting the accuracy of Bella and the proven evidence from Mark but that number was disturbing him at a high level. Jason would not be able to send the flight gadgets on Cloud because of Roy, he would detect the signal except from a distance to keep watch of their movement and not what they were doing. He gently pulled Bella away from him and went to his bag of gadgets. He took his system along with him. He brought out the flight gadgets with him, his personal gadget and activated it. It already had the map of Port Harcourt, and also its personal map of Cloud's territory. He sent it out of his house but directed it to fly out through the back. He already programmed it to circulate Cloud's territory but programmed it not to be close to the danger zones.

He was going back to the room when Olisa blew his horn. Bella was already awake when he entered the room.

"I can't believe I slept off. I have never slept this peacefully since twenty two years" she said yawning.

He just stood by the door watching her and wondering if he would allow her to go since the fifty were safe. It happened again, a little squeeze in his heart, like that was not the number.

"I am very worried because I know that face, I can read that face Wild. You can't prevent me from going back."

Of course she would. She was becoming too powerful for his liking.

"The fifty new captives have been rescued Bella."

"How?"

"It was not planned but two of my brothers had a mission to crack down on human traffickers who also sell human parts."

Her reaction showed she knew what he was saying.

"The fifty people have been rescued so I don't see any reason why you should go....." his phone interrupted him from finishing his sentence.

It was an alert, one or more of the words he had told Jason to program had been spoken. He quickly took his phone and played it but used a transmitter to listen. It was one of the things that Bella should not know. Mark was right, Cloud already knew when



the captives would be delivered to him. Roy was just telling him he got the confirmation message two hours ago. They were speaking through phone.

Olisa blew the horn again but he held Bella.

"I need to go" Bella shouted but he ignored her, his concentration on what Roy and Cloud were saying.

"What about the tech stuff you said you were planning?"

"I'm still on it" Roy answered.

"This is their third meeting, they still have just two which is exactly the day the goods will be delivered. You need to make sure everything is set cause we are off the next day, the day he will be expecting her for the sixth time" Cloud said.

"The day he is going to die" Roy said.

"I'm glad I have a tech guru like you, he must still be licking his wound after attempting to hack you. Good you destroyed his system. I hope you also threw away everything you used to hack him, everything connected to the gadget you used?" Cloud asked.

"That is not necessary boss...."

"Throw those fucking things away, I mean right fucking now. It is fucking contaminated whether you won or not, throw the damn things away. I will never trust technology someone can hack" Cloud shouted.

"I understand you boss. Although there is nothing to worry about, I will do that right away. If that will make you feel better."



Olisa blew its horn three times. He could not hold on to Bella any longer except he wanted war.

As Bella took the boxes and run to the gate, it took all his will to remain still. There was a big problem, they were about to lose their only way of knowing Cloud's card and he needed to think of a way out and he had only two days.

His phone blinked, it was a message from Jason.

'Not to worry, I already hit a jackpot'

'How?' he replied immediately.

'Roy has already plugged his phone on many of his computers and I already have his programming language, so no need to worry.'

'I still don't understand.'

'Okay lame man's language. I have the password to their wi-fi, meaning I can connect to any system he is using and right now, I am downloading every file. There is a probability that transactions will be in one of them because Roy believes he is the best and can't be hacked. So in ten minutes, I will withdraw completely, then scan everything for records.'

'And how long will that take?'

'Total of thirty minutes.'

'How sure are you that Roy has the files?'

'Fifty percent.'



'But that is not encouraging.'

'That's all you have right now and I don't think calling the police is a good idea.'

'What would you have suggested?'

'Calling the police but still don't think it is a good idea. Something does not feel right, almost like a puzzle I am not even seeing not to think of solving.'

Even Jason knew something was wrong.

'Do you think they are aware we are listening to them?'

'Hundred percent no. It's just the numbers about captives and the price you earlier reported Cloud was expecting to get from them. Although you did not state that Cloud mentioned the exact numbers, I just have that feeling about the numbers, like something is not right with the numbers.'

'Me too.'

'Good thing we have two days to figure out what Cloud has not said or thought about. I will contact you soon.'

He did not reply but dropped his phone on the bed his hands on his head thinking of a way to connect what Jason wrote and what he had been feeling and thinking and the fact that Bella was on her way back to the lion's den. But he might not allow anything happen to Bella because if Jason found the file containing evidences of Cloud's crimes, then the battle would begin in few hours' time because there were no more captives coming Cloud's way. He opened the app and sent a message for Beast, Mark, Fast, Doc,

Ghost and Wolf to get ready because once Jason gave the positive signal, the battle line would be drawn and they might even meet the debris of Cloud's territory before they land at Port Harcourt.

As he climbed on the bed, it hit him on his chest again. Something was wrong, there was something he and the Circle were missing, but he just could not place it.

CHAPTER TWENTY NINE

(In a card game, the second most hated word is 'last card', that's when you are not the one saying it)

Olisa drove to Cloud's place without saying anything to her like other times. It was not yet six in the morning but Cloud was already waiting for her. He told her to go and take her bath and he was waiting for her at the door of the bathroom. He stripped her of her towel and dragged her to the bed. She closed her mind on what Cloud was doing to her. She was happy Guardian was not connected to her. She could do it, she could leave what Cloud was doing to her. She closed her eyes and thought about AI, she was just so



beautiful, with her long and coiled hair. She remembered her argument with her dad about warriors, she imagined herself at the fortress Guardian talked about, the peace and harmony that would come after. And when Cloud left the bed, she had already slept off dreaming of living with Guardian, dreaming of Beast and his daughter.

Food was waiting for her when she woke up but Cloud was not around. She first cleaned up before eating. She tested the door but it was locked. There was no TV, nothing to do but sit down and lie down. At a point, she wished Guardian would connect to her but he did not. She just had to wait for night to come. She was at least grateful there was a wall clock to know the time.

Cloud came into the room around 6:10PM three and half hours before she was supposed to be taken to Guardian.

"Get a covering cloth on right now" Cloud commanded.

There was something wrong with his voice almost like he was panicking. She quickly put on her longest gown which was before her knees.

Cloud was already by the door and she had to double her steps to meet up with his long strides. She knew there was trouble as soon as she came outside. There were more armed men outside more than she had ever seen around Cloud. She did not have time to count because she was pushed into a car with Olisa as the driver.

There was no need to panic but she still panicked.

"Is everything alright?" she asked Cloud but got a slap as response.



It hurt like a hundred stings. She rubbed her palm on the affected cheek to help reduce the pain.

After just few minutes on the road, Cloud blindfolded her with a tie. That was when she knew there was really big trouble, something was wrong. She tried to see if she could connect to Guardian. She thought about him and thought about hearing what he was thinking but it did not work.

After a long drive, the car stopped. Cloud pulled her out and dragged her along with him.

After walking for some minutes, she knew they were entering a house.

"Boss we are ready" she heard Roy's voice.

"What of the client?" Cloud asked.

"Waiting. It's great one client is purchasing ten of them" Roy answered.

"What of the message I told you to deliver to Marvin?" Cloud asked.

"Done" Roy said.

"It's such a pity Marvin has to be part of the sacrificial lamb" Olisa said.

She was so confused and had no idea about what they were talking about.

"And the bomb?" Cloud asked.

"Already set. I made sure it's not yet ignited. It will be the moment I get a notice from one of the guards that he is inside the Club. Then I will ignite it and it will detonate in ten



seconds" Roy said.

"No" she screamed.

She understood what they meant. She had been wrong, they were not planning to let them meet for the fifth time. They were going to kill Guardian and they would be far away before Guardian would know except Guardian connected.

Her blindfold was roughly pulled off her face. The sight before her made her forget her predicament. There were up to about ten young ladies chained to poles. They were seriously shaking. She understood what Cloud was asking Roy about. They were slaves to be sold to one client.

"You know this can be you? You are already a whore, there is no difference. They are very strong you know. Olisa told me all my men has sampled them. One survived thirty men in one day, three at a go. But this one lying down there is of no use to me" Cloud said to her ears.

She looked at the one Cloud was talking about. She was not part of the ten, she was lying down on the ground barely breathing. Cloud brought out his pistol and shot at the girl's head.

"Noo" she screamed.

It was too late. The girl was dead. She could not save her. The others also screamed with her but theirs was because they were afraid they would be next. She could not hold her tears. Cloud turned her to face him.

"You remember that show I took you to? I have been dreaming of chaining you like that



just that I will be the only one enjoying you in every way. My dreams just came through” Cloud whispered to her ears making her shiver.

“They thought they could hide the fact that my goods have been hijacked but they don’t know I have friends in high places who give me first hand information of any police invasion or arrest of traffickers. So all along it was not drugs he was investigating me for, it was this business” Cloud continued.

That had taken her unawares. She tried to hide her shock but it was too late. Cloud had already seen it.

“You knew? You fucking knew” Cloud said calmly.

She shook her head not knowing what to say, she did not actually know much. Cloud sent a punch to her head knocking her down.

“What else do you know?” Cloud asked raising her jaw and forcing her to look at him.

She shook her head but he slapped her again.

“Fucking slot, fucking liar. What else do you know?”

She kept quiet. She would rather be dead than tell him. She braved herself for another beating but Cloud did not. Cloud left her but she did not raise her head to see where he went to.

“I am going to ask you one more time. Her life depends on your answer.”

She raised her head and saw Cloud was pointing his gun at the head of one of the girls. The one he said thirty of his men raped.



"What the fuck do you know?" Cloud shouted.

"Okay he told me the fifty captives have been rescued" she answered.

"How the fuck did he know about this business?" Cloud asked.

She wanted to lie but she just knew Cloud would know she was lying.

"I told him."

"Why?" Cloud asked.

She did not answer. Cloud pushed the gun at the girl's head making the girl to scream.

The girl was looking at her pleadingly.

"Because I love him, because he treats me with care and he promised to protect me"

she answered.

"That is why you searched my room. You love him."

Cloud started laughing.

"You made me lose millions and you are sure going to pay for it by doing the job you love most you fucking whore. I have already purchased all the equipment and you are sure gonna pay" Cloud said pushing the girl to the ground with force making her shrink from the impact. The girl was so afraid that she did not scream from the impact.

"Boss it's all set. The ship is ready, I have cleared the way. Amara is already there with Saro and the others. And it's dark enough to transport them" Roy said.

Dread took over the moment she fully realized what was going on. They were at PH port



and they were about to make their escape. They would be about two hours gone before Guardian would know what was going on except he connected to her which he was not doing. Guardian would be made to come pick her up from the club and he would not know something was off because even Marvin was not aware. The bomb would explode seconds after he most have entered the club, he would only know about it ten seconds to explosion and he would not be able to get away. Not just Guardian would die but all the people at the club.

"Cloud please you can't do this please. You cannot kill hundreds just because of one person" she pleaded crying.

She sincerely meant what she said, she knew even Guardian would understand. She could not bear the fact that hundreds were about to die because of Guardian.

'Connect Guardian, damn it' she thought as she cried and begged Cloud who was walking towards her.

"It is called collateral damage" Cloud said holding her cheek.

"I promise I will do anything but please don't. You already have me..."

"That is the thing. Your opinion does not count and I won't rest knowing he is still alive" Cloud said pinching her nipples.

"The game has ended and the winner has been decided. Wild lost and you need to always remember that, anytime I am going to be enjoying myself with you, you need to remember your guy lost to Cloud and that you will never get away from me. Never."

He pinched her nipples again before standing up.



She felt so helpless and hopeless. Even with Guardian's gift, they had lost. The gory sight of the dead girl was enough evidence that her effort was all a waste. She could hear the clatter of chains but she did not turn to find out what they were doing. She forced her eyes to look at the dead girl, her failure. She should have known Cloud still had slaves that were yet to be purchased who were being raped by Cloud's men. She should have known, she should have told Guardian and they would have been rescued long time ago and the dead girl would still be alive. It was all her fault, she could not save Lara and now, she could not save the dead girl even when help was very close. All she needed to do was to pay attention to Cloud and his men but she had not. She had only been worried about her dopes. That was all she had ever thought about, if not, she would have known something was off. Now ten more were on their way to becoming sex slaves and she would never be able to help them. The hundreds that had already been trafficked would never be rescued because she had only thought about her dopes. The only thing she had remembered was the fifty Cloud was expecting.

Cloud came to her and raised her up from the ground and started dragging her outside. She deserved everything Cloud was planning to do to her.

He had been busy since Bella left early in the morning because they had really

hit a jackpot. Not only did Roy have the contacts of those Cloud had done business with, both buying and selling, Roy also had the specific numbers Cloud had trafficked even before Cloud employed him. According to Jason's analysis, the customers were not supposed to be known. They covered their faces and used wrong names but Roy was very smart. He used fingerprint and scanned them through all databases in Nigeria, then saved them aligning them to their code name and giving them a face. Jason also believed Cloud was aware and it was something they used as blackmail or planning to use. Roy even had sex videos of popular and rich figures who they were also blackmailing. Cloud used to track them before Roy came. He would assign someone to follow them to their house. Jason knew that because Roy separated those that were only trailed and those that were both trailed and discovered through fingerprint and a bug. It was more than a miracle. The big issue was the time limit he had to sort out the numbers and locations. Major had joined him to send for all Special Forces giving them locations to where the slaves were. The Circle would focus on Cloud's customers because Roy also bugged them.

There was also the showroom Bella had talked about. It was right there in Port Harcourt. While the populated city moved around and lived out their daily activities, they had no idea that right there in the city was a showroom where people paid to watch girls being gruesomely raped by men and different equipment. Beast had said they were all his. While the Special Force were primarily on rescue mission, the Circle were to neutralize all Cloud's business partners. From the files Jason got from Roy, Cloud had about four trafficking business partners. They would deal with drugs later. The Lebanese were coming for the first time. It explained while Roy had not bugged them,

why they had no idea of what happened. Wolf, Ghost, Sabrina, Jason were sent to the four business partners. He knew before they would get to their targets the president would have signed a bounty on all of them. That needed to be done before going after Cloud because if Cloud died, the rumor would spread faster than wild fire and those captives might be killed and their targets might escape. The bigger problem were the captives. They were in about two hundred and thirty five different locations with the special force being only one hundred and fifty one in number. Major had to bring in the chief of staff because soldiers would need to be involved but the problem was they might send the wrong soldier under their paycheck.

After a long online meeting and planning, the Special Force were given the go ahead and they were on their way to the various location. They were lucky all the slaves were still in Nigeria. The instructions was to engage the same time. They would be around the location and wait for Major's command. They were trusting that the soldiers and air force and naval officers that were brought in to help with the operation would not mess up. They were five in one team but two for Special Force and one for The Circle. Stud had asked to be sent alone helping them to reduce the numbers of soldiers. While Major focused on the Special Force and Chief of staff appointed commanders focused on the soldiers and the navy and the air force officials, he focused on his team, on his family who were already on their way. Jason remained in Abuja but already positioned after sending his flight gadget which he said was connected to his tracking point sniper which he could use to send a controlled bullet. Only Jason understood that. He had already sent a life video to the app but had to include it on the screen for the online calls with the commanders which the president was watching with some

senators. From Cloud's client on Jason's radar, he had about twelve captives with him. They were chained up in one room, two boys and ten girls. He had about twenty security men around the big and high fenced compound.

'Targets on my radar, waiting for permission to neutralize' Jason sent a message. He was not expecting him to talk anyway.

Wolf was not leaving Edo state. A village close to Ekpoma was his location. And he was almost there. Ghost was on his way to Lagos. Fast was going to drop him then navigate using the sea as route to fly Beast and Mark to PH port where they believed Cloud would use as retreat which was also not far from where the show room was located. They were not to engage until Bella must have been dropped by Olisa. As for him, he was going to start with Olisa.

After everything had been set in place, he checked his time to discover it was already past seven in the night. They had been sorting files and analyzing them, then giving the different forces their specific assignment for almost twelve hours. He was so tired. What took more of his time was sorting out all the slaves, their captors and Cloud's customers. They had to even solve math equations to get just one location. Jason believed Roy did not do it because he believed he would be hacked, he did it because of the others working under him. They would never be able to solve it because they would not know the formula which was Roy's creation which Jason was able to solve. Even with the formula, it took him at least twenty minutes to solve the first stage, Roy was that good but Jason solved everything in five minutes. Mark and others also helped. And another person helped, his love, no other person but Geoffrey. Ghost had

been the one to suggest that one of the math should be given to Geoffrey without formula to find out if he would be able to do something and it was just unbelievable that within seven minutes he was done.

'Nnewi, No twelve Nnamdi road behind Dangote cement complex' was sent by Geoffrey to Jason who sent it to the app.

Geoffrey did not only solve the math, he converted it to letters. Although Jason said he told him to do so. He said Geoffrey was asking for more. And so Jason had sent more. There was nothing there to understand. Why should he try to understand? Geoffrey helped them, it was as simple as that.

As he came back from eating bread and wine and having a shower, he heard a knock at the gate. It was Marvin with the instruction to tell him to come pick Bella himself at the club. He honed in on Marvin and saw nothing mischievous. Cloud had only changed his mind and that could be to his advantage. As he went to pick stuffs he needed and to tell them to still be on standstill till he returned with Bella, Doc sent a message. She was now in Enugu. She had flown a helicopter and landed it at the military base. He knew they would all be in their location by the time he would come back with Bella. Bella would never be going back to Cloud, Bella would soon be on her way home.

The sight that greeted her outside was astonishing and surprising. Hundreds if



not thousands of cranes and goods on the shore. They were still far away from the shore. It would take them at least twenty minutes of trekking to navigate their way to the sea. She turned towards where they were coming from. It was Cloud's lodge. How on earth did she forget Cloud had a lodge near the port? She started crying, she was so stupid. She had been there once. Cloud was hosting his friends who were partners in crime and she had been made to follow Cloud just for Cloud's show off. She had been blindfolded but she should have known Cloud would have a lodge there. She was guilty, there was no excuse. The dead girl was because of her.

She saw the other ten girls being led outside by Roy and Olisa. They all had a chain necklace but she knew it must be a device because they walked obediently towards the shore without making an attempt to run and without being forced. She knew that chain necklace was the reason. Something would happen to them if they ran but she was not chained, Cloud did not have a tight grip on her. She could run.

She was already on the move even before her mind could tell her body to run. She had no idea where she was running to but she just ran and screamed. It was night but the shore was still busy. All she needed was to run like five minutes and she would be within hearing distance. But her fate was sealed the moment someone grabbed her from the back knocking her out.

He had not connected to Bella because he was already brain tired and he needed to focus but as he got close to the club, he felt dread. Something was wrong. He

quickly stopped his car and knew that Marvin who had been following him had driven past him. He tried to connect to Bella but tasted liquid fear. He could not connect to her. It was blank like Bella was not existing and there was another thing, Bella was not in the club because the distance was enough to feel her.

Something was terribly wrong. He just knew Bella was unconscious. That was the only explanation he could give himself. She was not dead, he was very sure of that. If he was connected to her he could have prevented her from going unconscious but he had no idea why Bella should be unconscious in the first place.

If Bella was not in the Club, then why was he told to come there? Except it was a trap, except Cloud was already making his retreat, except someone high in the police must have tipped Cloud off and Cloud already knew the fifty slaves would no longer be coming making Cloud to change the plan. But where was he and where was Bella?

He quickly connected to the app and sent a quick situation report to them, he connected his transmitter and also connected to the other commanders.

'I am going to grant permission. Beast confirm you are in position.'

"Just got there not yet landed" Beast answered.

"I need all of you to engage now, Bella is in trouble and I need all hands on deck."

"I'm ninety five percent sure they are right now on a ship sailing to Lagos' Jason sent a message.

He had positioned his flight bird near the showroom because he never thought what was happening would happen.



"Is everyone in position?" he asked after switching to the others.

"It's been four hours Wild. We are all waiting for you" the chief of staff responded.

It had been more than four hours actually but it was for the slaves' current captors. They had started with that puzzle and the forces were distributed based on their closeness to the location but the Circle were the last to be mobilized and assigned. He switched connection and asked his team.

"Confirm your position. Jason, over."

'Targets in view' Jason sent message.

"Beast? Over."

"Dropping. Ready to attack. Over."

"Ghost? Over."

"Ghost mode activated. Over."

"Sabrina? Over."

"Targets sighted, waiting for permission to dance. Over."

"Wolf? Over."

"Only eleven targets. All under my senses. Over."

He switched over to the commanders.

"My men are also in position, the ball is now on your court Mr. President."



As long as the president was still actively watching, he was in charge.

"Permission to return fire for fire and to rescue all the slaves granted. All the slave traders are wanted dead or alive, captors not excluded" he heard the president's voice.

"Roger that" he and all the commanders chorused.

He switched over to his family. But before he could grant permission to them, he got a message from Major.

'Make sure you find and bring my daughter-in-law home. It's a command.'

'Roger that' he replied.

"Permission granted. You are to neutralize all targets. President said they are wanted dead or alive, make sure it is the former. And Beast you guys have five minutes to finish your work. I need you at the shore. I am already sending the flight bird and I am going to be driving there. Let's hope I will be with Bella before you get there. Over."

"Roger that." All of them chorused.

He was already hearing gunshots even before he ignited his jeep. He had no idea who decided to use a gun. Should be Jason and Wolf. He had always had one rule about undercover, he made sure he did not only create routes to go home but more routes to enter. From the very day he chose to take the undercover mission, he had a big boat positioned at the port. He would be able to get close enough to sense Bella. He was going to kill Cloud slowly.



CHAPTER THIRTY

(Fear is for the brave. It's a personality cowards can never stare in the eyes- Wild)

She woke up on a rug, her hands were chained together. She turned her head and saw the other ten girls chained like her. She felt something on her neck and tried to look down. She had same chain like the girls.

She tested the chain on her hands but it was very strong and the padlock was very locked.

"What is going on?" she panicked turning round to locate Cloud but he was not around.

"We are on our way to permanent slavery" the girl Cloud had pointed a gun at spoke.

"Where are we?"

"On a ship. Our fate is sealed. It looks like you were the master's favorite but you messed up. Now you are now with us" one of the girls said.

She understood what the girl was saying but it was not true. Cloud would never sell her. He was just punishing her. The only thing confusing was the girls were still with Cloud and his crew.



"What's your name?" she asked the girl Cloud pointed a gun at.

"Mary."

"But you joined the ship, I thought there was a client..."

"Lagos lady. They will drop us at Lagos" Mary said.

"I'm sorry I could not save you guys. I'm sorry I could not save your friend" she cried.

"You are so soft and kind. You are also a captive too you know" another girl said.

Suddenly, she felt him but she was not relieved, she was more than pissed off.

'Where the heck have you been' she shouted in her mind.

But her anger stopped almost immediately. Guardian had been scared. The second time she was experiencing Guardian's fears.

'I was busy with some important stuffs. I did not connect because I needed to focus.

Then Marvin had come with a letter stating I am to pick you up at the club. I was on my way when I felt something was wrong but before I could connect I lost you. It was almost like you stopped existing. That was when I knew something was wrong. I stopped my car confused on what to do because I knew you were not at the club. If you were at the club I would have at least sensed you even though I could not connect because I am very close to the club'

She heard everything but only one thing stuck. He said he was close to the club.

'No no. Get far away from the club. There is a bomb to be ignited once you step inside'



she screamed in her mind.

'With the clubbers inside?'

'Yes, with many of his men too. He said they are collateral damage. Get far away from the club.'

'How many seconds once it's ignited.'

'Ten.'

'Do you have an idea of the location?'

But she was distracted from answering cause Cloud was in the room.

'Bella' Guardian called.

'I have no idea Guardian.'

'Damn it. Where are you?' Guardian shouted in her head.

"He did not take the bait. Is it that someone tipped him off? Did Beke tip him off? But he does not know what is up. He was only told to contact Roy once Wild enters the club.

But Marvin said he stopped. That he suddenly stopped. Something is off but I can't fix it. Except one of my men knew there is a bomb waiting for him. Ha I know. We underestimated his sixth sense. He had stopped very close to the club where Marvin is now currently banging a girl happy about the money I sent to his account after thanking him for a job well done. Tayo had been accurate. We thought he won't know except the



time tomb starts counting but he already knows. So I have a plan. While I start my fantasies with you. I will make Roy make Marvin negotiate with him. His life or the life of the people in the club" Cloud said pulling her up.

She started shivering, Guardian did not even try to calm her fears.

"So what do you think your lover boy will do? One, he will never be able to find you because Marvin believes we are on our way to Benin to take care of some business. He will surely do the work well but while your lover boy decides who should die, I will be have a wonderful time with you. How come I never thought of taking a break? I have Wild to thank" Cloud said dragging her out of the room."

'Guardian' she panicked but Guardian was silent.

She screamed from fear the moment Cloud pulled her to a room full of sick equipment.

"No Cloud please don't do this to me...."

Cloud hit her head stopping her words midway. There was no way out. Even if Guardian could navigate his way out of what Cloud had set for him, he would never be able to make it in time to save her from the horror she was about to experience.



He and Jason had known something was wrong but never understood until he connected to Bella, until he went through what had happened in her mind, until he discovered they had missed out eleven captives one already dead with ten on their way to being sex slaves, Bella not exempted. Then Cloud had entered the room she was being held captive. There was trouble. He had to choose between Bella and the lives of hundreds. He sighted Marvin driving towards him. Cloud already had his plans in motion before he even came to Bella and a foolish Marvin did not know he had just saved his life by not entering the club.

He heard Bella's scream which pierced through his heart. He was toast. He would not be able to get to Bella on time to stop Cloud from torturing her and he also could not move because hundreds would be blown off. He would have ignored Marvin by not giving him permission to talk to him but Cloud's mind was already made up. He just knew that even if he prevented Marvin from talking to him, Cloud would still blow off the club. Just from the voice of Cloud, the innocent people that would die was not even to punish him because he was supposed to also die, it was his gift to the armed forces, to the president and he could not allow that to happen.

'Bella let me. Give me full control' he pleaded.

He wanted to try out something but it would not work because Cloud was not planning to kill Bella. He was planning to give her bodily harm while raping her or exploiting her. The only thing was for him to take all the brunt while thinking of a way to handle Marvin who was already by his car. But Bella did the unexpected. She pulled out, for the second time. He was not the one who did it. He only glimpsed her thinking she would never

allow him to be distracted.

'I will survive just make sure you find a way out and come for me. I will wait for you' and she was gone.

He tried to connect but met a wall. He just solved a mystery but it was the wrong time.

"No, he shouted hitting the steering wheel."

It could not be. Sex with Bella also handed her the power to do other things. And Bella was gradually unfolding them. If she could kick him out, then it meant she could connect but he was sure she was not aware of that. He tried to forcefully connect but met a block. He was going mad.

Marvin was already hitting his windscreen. He needed to focus and get to Bella quickly.

Without saying a word to him, Marvin handed over a Nokia torchlight phone to him. He left without saying a word. He had to read Marvin. Marvin was actually not aware of what was going on. He was even angry he had to be called out from having sex in one of the motels and he was going back to continue from where he stopped. Cloud was determined to kill all his men who did not go with him.

He checked the phone and dialed the only number there.

"Finally I get to speak to his majesty."

It was Roy.

"Where is Bella?" he asked.



Roy's answer sent a piercing pain down his chest. Bella was screaming. He tried to connect back but met block again. He felt tears dropping from his eyes.

"That's is all I can tell you for now" Roy said.

"Your death will be painful. You, Olisa and Cloud, Aboy inclusive."

But Roy started laughing.

"Save the impossible for the underworld. And don't bother tracking this phone call because it will direct you to the club. You love playing games, Olisa....."

"What do you want?"

"Oh straight to the point" Olisa said. The two were together.

He heard Bella's scream again and another tear dropped from his eyes.

"Your life or hundreds of people dancing in the club. I think the reason you stopped is because you know there is a trap. Great sixth sense. And you are right. Once I make a particular call, it will be ignited and detonated in ten seconds. But we have decided to make you a hero. You can choose to die alone or you can allow civilians to die."

He ignited his jeep. He wanted to ask about Bella but that would be a waste of time.

"Take me, leave the civilians" he said.

"That was fast. Too fast. What a hero you are. Just drive straight to the club, ask for a drink and that will be all but if you drive away from the club they will all die."

"What kind of stupid deal is that? Even a fool will not believe you will keep to your



words" he said.

"Is your choice to trust..." he cut the call and drove fast towards the club.

It was a waste of time talking to Roy. He could not believe he had made the mistake of waiting for a negotiation. There was no way Roy would not blow the club. His options were clear enough message.

Immediately he stopped by the club, he closed his eyes and recalled his recent connection with Bella. He followed the thread leading to her. They were definitely in a ship but which ship?

"What are you going to do?" Beast asked.

He was still connected to his team and they were also connected to him.

"Face my fears and get to Bella quickly."

"On our way to PH port. Stay alive" Beast said.

"And the targets?"

"Neutralized, police on their way. Mark and I will check out the ships going to Lagos while Fast remains in the air. That can also help pinpoint the ship because they will become desperate. It's a military chopper. Jason is also trying to track Roy" Beast said.

He disconnected from them. He needed to focus. He was about to try something he had never tried before. There was a ninety percent chance it would not work but that

was the only option available. Okay there was another additional option. His mum's advice. He opened his door but did not come out immediately. He closed his eyes.

"Dear Lord, though I have never thanked you for this gift, thank you. I am sorry I am talking to you now that I am in big trouble but I promise we will settle that if I come out of here alive. Thanks. I'm trusting my mum is having fun."

He came out and walked inside the club. Roy did not waste time because he sensed danger the moment he was close to the counter. The crowd should be approximately about two hundred and fifty. It looked like Cloud had given all his men he did not take with him a day off. Most of them were dancing and drinking. But the bomb was about to explode and it would get to the park. He remembered his favorite quote and said it out loud as he attempted what he had never done before. He could control humans who were targeting him for a kill, he wanted to see what he could do to an object. There was no going back.

He closed his eyes and ignored the bar man asking him for what he wanted to order. He honed in to the danger. He had less than eight seconds.

"Fear is for the brave.." he said connecting to the bomb.

He was not expecting it to work but it did.

Like the first time he had seized the mind of someone about to shoot him, he allowed his mind to defend his body. He was amazed by what his mind was doing, no he was horrified. With his mind he disconnected the wires leading from the battery of the

trigger and timer, he removed the neutron trigger, a small disc like ball, then he removed the conventional explosive which would be the first part to explode, then finally, he separated the U-325 masses, which were two small heavy chunks of metal made of uranium stopping the bomb from detonating with exactly a second left to spare. The bomb blast would have shaken the whole of Kidney Island killing hundreds if not thousands.

"It is a personality cowards can never stare in the eyes. Thank you Lord" he said tears running from his eyes.

He did it. One of his motivating factors had been the fact that the roof and windows of their cottage had shattered due to his emotions when he had held the lifeless body of his mother. Also, it was the fact that he could seize anyone targeting him for a kill, but most importantly, for the first time he understood the purpose of his gift, he knew the source of the gift, he prayed and he was answered. Hundreds would not die because of his gift. He could hear his mum saying Moses always came to her mind anytime she thought of his gifts.

He had no time to celebrate his victory because he was being targeted by Cloud's men. He picked it from one of their minds. They had been instructed to kill him. The man not far from his left was the first to fire.

CHAPTER THIRTY ONE

(The battle line has been drawn, there is absolutely no room for the weak. In the game of the wild, you either win or die- Wild)

The shot was fired but it did not hit him. He already had the mind of the man and he redirected the direction to one of the security guards who was almost about to fire at him. The bullet hit the man on his forehead killing him on the spot.

He brought out his desert pistol and fired at one of them by his left same time honing in into all of them and also diving behind the counter for cover. It was going to drain him but he needed to get to Bella. Feminine and masculine screams rent the air as people scuffled for cover. He had control of over a hundred, if he did not act fast, he would black out within a minute. He commanded their mind to fire at each other.

He could feel their shock and their struggles to get free but he held on. Cloud's security started shooting each other. The bar man was trying to bring out a weapon from under the counter. He did not bother to add him to the list, he just shot him on his head and jumped out of the counter. He had at least thirty seconds more, he needed to help them. He fired all the remaining bullets in his pistol then reloaded and fired randomly at Cloud's men. He reloaded again but just one bullet remained when everywhere became silent. Then screams from fear. The clubbers would never be able to explain why Cloud's security turned on each other and why a huge man was killing them.

"Everyone get out right now" he shouted putting enough command in his voice. They started running outside stampeding on each other. A lot would be injured but he was

sure none would die. He went back to the counter and saw a nonalcoholic Eva wine which he opened and gulped with urgency. He sat on the ground after gulping everything. The club was almost empty apart from the dead bodies and those trying to stand up after being used as a foot match. Soon the club was empty and was silent as a grave yard but he was still very weak.

He tried standing up to test his strength but sat back on the ground. He was still very weak. Kiko's own was completely different, he was the ' betrayer' and the one who ambushed Kiko, so he controlled at most three at once and fired many without controlling them so there was enough energy left when he faced Kiko who had no bullet left. There was no need to seize his mind because it was actually Wolf who got near Kiko before him, so it had been only Kiko who was left when he joined Wolf who complained there was almost nothing left for him to do.

But Cloud's men had come on him once. He had never controlled so much at a go, same way he had never taken control of an object programmed to kill him. He was having a first for so many things in one day.

He gathered all his strength and grabbed another wine from the counter. He opened the wine and drank all but still felt dizzy. He could at least stand up. He picked two more wines, opened one and drank as he staggered to his jeep, his senses opened for any danger. He wanted to connect to them. He had pulled off connection before he was fired at but he did not. He was still too weak to talk. He needed all his energy. He opened the fourth wine and drank as he drove towards PH port.



The pain was too much, she did not want to scream, she wanted to disappoint Cloud but she could not. She had tried to fight him but he had easily overpowered her, the chain in her hand had not even helped.

"Even if you are able to escape me, I will just taze you using this chain on your neck which will never leave your neck" Cloud had said after tying her to the high bed post. He had raised her hand to be above her head with the first chain still intact, then he had sliced her clothes with a razor. He had brought out a huge vibrator and forced it into her anus making her to scream from excruciating pain.

She was definitely injured and would take days to recover. She had felt Guardian trying to still force his way in but she kept him out. She was still surprised she could actually do that. She had just strongly believed Guardian must not witness her horror and it happened, she had pushed him out. She screamed when Cloud pushed it further same time biting her nipples like an animal, drawing blood. She was yet to physically heal from his former mauling but Cloud did not care, he was even groaning.

"Please get that thing off me, it's tearing me into two, please Cloud" she found herself pleading, something she had vowed she would never do. But Cloud did not answer, instead, he pushed it further and bit her breast making her scream and making Cloud to groan. Cloud pulled back and stripped himself naked, he pulled out the vibrator and pushed it back with force, then it started vibrating. The stuff was too big for her, the pain was excruciating.

Cloud left her and came back with a whip and started whipping her buttocks after



Edit with WPS Office

turning her to kneel on all fours. The chain pulled her hand as Cloud twisted her and she felt like one of her hands must have broken. While the giant vibrator was still on her, Cloud also invaded her, biting her back, her neck and her ears while quizzing her bleeding breast. She was never going to survive before Guardian would get to her. The pain was too much. Even if she survived, she would not be able to let Guardian see what was left of her.

Cloud invaded her like a starved animal and showed no mercy to her pains. She knew that was not even near what Cloud was planning for her. Cloud suddenly stopped and removed the huge vibrator but invaded her again replacing the vibrator. She was already too torn there and it hurt so much. She would not survive, she also had no idea if Guardian was alive. What if he was dead and would not be able to connect?

Panic gripped her amidst her pains. The pressure on her hands was painful, it was as if someone was pulling her towards opposite directions and Cloud was just starting with her. She would not survive, she would die a prostitute.

There was a gunshot, then two gunshots, then more gunshots. Cloud stopped and went close to the door.

"What the fuck is going on?" Cloud shouted.

But there was no answer just gunshots. Cloud quickly put on his clothes. He brought out a pistol from under the bed and went to the door. The gunshots were becoming too much, too loud and too close.

"Can someone tell me what the fuck is happening?" Cloud shouted again.



"Why is no one answering me, Roy and Olisa where the fuck.." Cloud stopped.

It was not because he wanted to stop. The ship was shaking, then almost immediately, she heard a crash like something crashed. Then gunshots resumed then a scream. It was Olisa. She had no idea what was happening but his scream did not sound human, she could tell he was in so much pain and after what felt like thirty seconds, his screams stopped. Cloud cocked his gun and pointed at the door. But there was something else. Cloud was terribly shaking.

"Don't move. If you want to live, stay where you are" It was Roy and from his voice, he was by the door.

"I only take order from my king" she heard a deep baritone voice. She had heard that voice, she had seen that face. That was Beast but how?

She heard a gunshot making her scream, Roy must have shot Beast. It made Cloud to remember her. He turned and started walking to the bed but stopped when he heard Roy's animal-like guttural screams which ended within few seconds.

Cloud was on her loosening the chain. He pulled her close to him after forcefully dragging her away from the bed. The other chain holding her two hands together was still there. He brought out a dagger from under from the bed. She tried to use that opportunity to escape but he pulled her roughly by her hair making her scream from the pain. He pulled her to his chest forcing her back to rest on him. He pointed the pointed edge of the sharp dagger to the hollow of her right neck.

"You are not going anywhere. If I cannot get you, no one will" Cloud said. There was

hysteria and determination in his voice.

She heard the door being pushed but it did not budge. The person outside attempted pushing the door again and the door crashed scaring the shit out of Cloud including her. Beast was not joking when he said he would break walls to get to her, he literally meant what he said. He was very huge like Guardian, bigger than the picture of him Guardian had showed her.

He was not with gun but there was something spinning around him. It looked like a disc in shape but it glowed different colors of light. Cloud fired at him with his other hand with the gun but the bullet was deflected, explaining the purpose of the alien stuff.

"Drop your weapon or she dies" Cloud shouted pushing the dagger in, she felt blood flowing out before she felt pains increasing the parts where she was feeling pains. She felt Guardian trying to connect to her. She opened her mind and allowed him.

He was very angry but for the first time ever, it was directed at her, then at Cloud, then at himself. He must have seen what she had passed through already.

"Beast, what's the situation report? Over" Guardian said but she heard him just like she heard his discussion with Cloud at the club.

It made her to remember the bomb.

'My pride and queen, you are in severe pains, you are being held as a hostage with a dagger on your neck, yet you are worried about others. I love you more than I can ever express.'



"All targets have been neutralized, Mark is unlocking the chains of the captives and freeing them. Just the main target holding Bella as a hostage" Beast said.

"Wait for my command to act. Do you copy?" Guardian said.

"Roger that" Beast answered.

"I know you, you are the bank robbery guy. You fit the description" Cloud said, his voice still sounding hysterical.

"Leave her and I promise to be quick with your death" was Beast's response.

"Tell me. How did you find me? Is there something I'm missing? How did you fucking crash that door with just your bare hands? How did you find me?" Cloud asked.

She was in a dangerous situation but she also wanted answers to Cloud's questions.

"Beast answer him while I prepare Bella. Do you copy?"

"Roger that" Beast answered.

'Give me everything, allow me take over' Guardian said to her mind. She allowed him like the time Cloud had almost killed her. It felt the same way, like she was just an observer of her body. She had felt something that almost made her pull out but she could not because it was too late. Guardian was very weak. He was trying to hide it but she felt his weakness. He started trying to take the pain from her.

'Guardian no. Do whatever you want to do to get me out of this but please don't take the pain. I felt it, you are weak' but Guardian was not listening, he was rather fuming with rage. Beast was talking to Cloud. She noticed he was completely avoiding looking at her



battered naked bleeding body.

"Roy led us straight to you. The thing is that Wild was not trying to hack Roy, it was just a bait which he took. Smart move when you told Roy to destroy the gadgets but it was already too late because our computer guru already had access to Roy's network password. Whatever that means. So when Roy went online using a new device to activate the chain on Wild's wife or something else, I don't really know..."

"Who the fuck is Wild's wife? There is.."

"Her name is not Joan, her name is Bella and she is legally married to Wild."

"What the fuck are you saying?" Cloud shouted.

"So when Roy recently went online using another laptop, my kid brother connected to the device and tracked it and sent it to us as we were on our way and before you ask, yes, all your business partners in trafficking business both buying and selling customers have either been neutralized or arrested or are being neutralized and arrested and your captives are free" Beast continued ignoring Cloud's question.

She felt Cloud's shock, then panic.

"Nobody is going to take her away from me, she is mine. I don't mind dying as long as I go with her. If you want her alive fucking leave now" Cloud shouted, pushing the dagger further inside but she was not feeling the pain.

'My queen let him, let him stab you. I'm going to allow you move so I can concentrate on your neck. At the count of three try to pull away. I got you, it will only scar but I will repair the inside.'



"I will kill her if you are still around at the count of ten. One" Cloud shouted.

'If you tell me to walk into fire, I will gladly enter knowing the fire will never burn me.

Even if I die, just know I know you never wanted it to happen. I love you more than life itself' she said.

"Three" Cloud shouted.

"One, two, three. Now Bella' Guardian said.

She used all her strength to try pull away making Cloud to send the dagger deep down her neck. She saw the shock in his face, she could see Cloud did not want to stab her, she could see he did it out of panic. He had released her making her to fall on the ground. She could not feel pains but she felt tired. Beast was immediately on Cloud, he was too fast for his size.

Cloud tried to fight him but Beast seized his hand midway and broke it, like the way people break a tiny stick. Cloud screamed but it sounded like music to her ears. She was now feeling dizzy, Guardian was saying something to her head but she did not hear, she was focused on what Beast was doing to Cloud. She could not black out now that Cloud was getting paid, she must watch all.

Beast took his other hand as Cloud screamed and struggled to get out, but Cloud was like a little antelope trying to wriggle its way out of a giant anaconda's grip. He was no match for Beast strength.

"The president wants you dead or alive but my team don't do alive, we do dead" Beast said turning Cloud upside down. He broke Cloud's right leg or was it left? She was so

dizzy. Cloud groaned like a wounded animal. It sounded so sweet and musical, like a lullaby. She must be evil to enjoy someone's pain.

"That was for all the kidnapped victims and also the dead ones. Now this is for all the military personnel you killed" Beast said breaking his other leg.

Cloud's screams became guttural but it was like listening to a beautiful orchestra. It sounded so great and excellent.

"Please, just kill me. Fucking kill me" Cloud shouted.

The great Cloud, the most dangerous inhuman drug lord she knew which was also confirmed by whisperers was begging to be killed, was begging for the torture to end. She remembered the agent Cloud had sliced to death, who had begged Cloud to just end him but he had drown in the innocent man's scream. She owe Beast a hug, this had always been one of her dreams, especially after the day Cloud had taken her to the showroom. She had wished Cloud would be made to face so much pain that he would beg for death.

"You want me to kill you?" Beast asked stepping on his manhood.

Cloud could not answer because of the screams that followed. How did Beast know what to do? What a nice single orchestra if there was even anything like that.

"That is for the pains the slaves you sold went through. I am also preparing you for the underworld" Beast said pulling Cloud up.

Someone else entered the room. She knew it. She was dead because the man that entered looked like an angel. Beast was looking like an angel of death but the new man



was looking like the angel that would lead her to heaven although he forgot to wear white. He was so handsome. He did not look her way. She wanted to call him, to tell him not to look at the bed because she was right there but she was so tired and dizzy. He dragged the bedspread and covered her with it. He pressed a phone he was holding and the chain on her neck fell off.

"Our queen" he said bending close and touching the dagger still in her neck. He did not pull it away but she just knew the dagger was suddenly no longer in her neck.

"I'm Mark and I'm honored to meet you" he said holding her hand.

She wanted to tell him she remembered Tayo's description of him but she could not, her mouth wouldn't open. She could not even smile at him.

"You are about to go home our queen. He is holding you, I don't know how the heck he's doing it but I know he will not let you leave us. They are all waiting for you to come home" Mark said.

Mark had blocked her from seeing Cloud who was still screaming but Beast dragged him to where she was lying down. Beast raised a screaming Cloud and placed him on his waist like he was a log of wood he wanted to break.

"This finally is for everything you did to our queen. Wild said I should tell you checkup" Beast said and broke him.

He used his knee to hold Cloud and broke him with his two hands like he was a wood. Cloud's scream stopped after a second, he looked like a rumpled doll. Beast threw him far away from her. He bent close to her.



"Mark let me" Beast said.

Mark shifted and Beast raised her up.

"Let's go home" Beast said.

She wanted to nod but could not. She felt the darkness overpowering her.

'Don't be afraid my queen. Let go, rest. Close your eyes and rest. I'm with you my love' she heard Guardian's voice.

She listened to him, she closed her eyes and allowed the darkness to envelope her knowing fully well her guardian would keep her safe.

CHAPTER THIRTY TWO

(Our scars do not only show where we got injured, they also show God's mercy and what we have survived- Oma Holly)

She was Lara again but this time, she knew it was a dream or a memory. She was with Guardian and Hunter Seyi and they were squatting close to a rabbit hole. Smokes were already coming out from the hole after Guardian had set some dry leaves on fire, then blew out the fire and pushed the smoking leaves inside the hole. Soon, a rabbit rushed out of the hole and Guardian caught it from escaping by hitting it with a

stick. She had ran to Hunter without even knowing. The way the rabbit rushed out was so scary.

"Lara touch it" Guardian said shoving the rabbit which was jerking towards her. She screamed and grabbed Hunter's neck.

Guardian started laughing.

"Lara I thought you said you came with Ola because you wanted to join him to learn how to catch rabbits?" Hunter asked her.

"Yes but the rabbit will bite me."

"It will not Lara. Look it's no longer jerking, it is dead. You can touch it. You know I will never allow it to hurt you" Guardian said.

"Okay."

She slowly stretched her hand and touched the tail of the dead rabbit with just a tip of her middle finger. It was soft to touch. The rabbit did not move giving her enough boldness to touch its waist.

"You see. As long as you are with me, you should trust me. Did the rabbit bite you?" Guardian asked.

She shook her head. She ran her palm on the rabbit's furry back.

"Do you trust me?" Guardian asked.

She nodded.



"Then carry it" Guardian said.

Without thinking about it, she carried the rabbit, it was warm to touch. She did not fear at all. Guardian was around, nothing would happen to her. She started smiling.

"Hunter Seyi, you said you will teach me the next stage today" Guardian said to Hunter.

"You are getting better Ola. Today I will teach you how to smoke it yourself" Hunter said to Guardian.

"Lara do you want to eat smoked rabbit?"

"Will it taste like the one you brought that day that Mum used to cook pepper soup?"

"Better than that" Guardian answered.

"Okay" she said standing up with the dead rabbit.

"Can I carry it?" she asked.

"Okay" Guardian said.

"Let's go" Hunter said.

She carried the rabbit with both hands but missed her step because she did not see a wood because she was looking at the rabbit on her hands. Guardian caught her before she could fall. Even before he caught her, she already knew Guardian would never let her fall.

She opened her eyes to a large bedroom with sky blue as background. She was confused about her environment because it was definitely not Cloud's room. She saw a



canvas of little Lara and a boy. No that was her little self and young Guardian. Where was she?

She tried to remember what must have happened but could not. She was not on a hospital bed because there was no drip and the bed she was lying on was very gigantic.

She slowly stood up to inspect the room. There were three black couches, one big and two small ones facing a big TV which was in front of the bed. The wardrobe was by her left and a door which she believed would lead to the bathroom was close to the wardrobe. By her right was a bigger door which she knew would lead outside and that was where she was going to. But the door opened before she could get to it. It was Guardian looking majestic and handsome. He was on black shirt which showed all his defined muscles. His black jean trouser clung to his body and... she raised her head. She felt shy, Guardian had caught her looking down.

"Do you know you are very pretty when you are shy?"

His baritone voice sounded not just on her chest but down to her stomach and down below her stomach. He started walking towards her like a lion stalking its prey. She found herself moving back. She was not afraid, she was just feeling something she could not explain.

"What the heck is going on? What happened?"

Guardian did not answer but he kept stalking her and she kept moving backwards.

"This is not your room I know about. Where is this place and why can't I remember?"

He still did not answer, just kept coming.



She stumbled but Guardian was on time to keep her from falling, just like her dream. He was just too huge.

He placed his hands on a side of her neck. There was a bandage there. She had not even felt it until Guardian touched it.

Immediately, she remembered. She remembered everything that happened, how Beast had gradually broken Cloud, how it was almost too late because Cloud had ripped her body with that vibrator, how she would never be able to recover from it.

'You know I can read and talk to your mind without connecting as long as I'm close to you' Guardian spoke to her mind.

'You don't understand...'

'Ssh, breathe in.'

She did as instructed.

'Breathe out.'

She breathed out.

Guardian carried her and placed her on the bed, then joined her and placed her on top of him. He made her head rest on his heart.

'Can you hear my heartbeat?' Guardian asked.

'Yes.'

'Follow it, let our hearts beat together.'



She did as instructed and it was so cool. Guardian pulled her up making her chest rest on his chest.

It was as if one large heart was beating and not two hearts.

'That's it. Now close your eyes.'

She closed her eyes.'

'Try to remember what Cloud did to you on that ship.'

She wanted to panic but she felt waves of calm.

She tried to, she remembered but she could not feel anything almost like she was watching her twin and not her.

'Can you feel it?'

'No.'

'Do you know why?'

'No.'

'Because it is past and he is past and because Guardian is here, because you fought and you won, we won. You can't allow Cloud to rule your present. He is just supposed to be a reminder of your bravery, a reminder that he was once your captor who felt he was untouchable but who begged for death to come.'

She remembered Cloud begging for death.

'Yes, that is the part you should remember. With that, you will only remember the loser

and not the ruler of your present and future. There is just one ruler now.'

'You.'

'No, God. After God me.'

She remembered Guardian's mum, she remembered they used to conduct their Sunday service by themselves with other maids and workers who were Christians.

'I don't think God will accept me again. I can't remember the last time I went to church.'

'I also stopped but after I prayed like Mum always told me to do and after He answered, I went to church for the first time since my Mum was murdered.'

'Wait, how long have I been out?'

'Just four days. Today is Thursday. I went for midweek service.'

'You think I can join you to thank Him for bringing you back to me?'

'Yes of course. He listened to me after twenty two years of not talking to Him, He is waiting for you sweetheart. We both have a lot to be grateful for.'

She remembered the bomb that was supposed to explode at Cloud's club.

'Ssh Bella, the bomb was defused.'

'But?'

'I entered there after asking God to help me. It turned out that I can mentally connect to not just a human trying to kill me but also an object programmed to kill me.'



'I don't understand.'

'If someone comes at me with the aim of killing me, that person has automatically handed over his or her will to me and I can force the person to do my bidding.'

'That is scary and how come I have no memory of that?'

'Because I only discovered I can do that when one of the men of the kingpins tried to kill me when I came back to look for you.'

'You really have a lot to tell me about. Like who was behind your father's downfall and all those tattoo marks on your back.'

'I am not proud of the tattoos, I know Mum won't be happy.'

'Then why did you do it?'

'It was a sudden decision I regretted later. We we discuss this later?'

She nodded.

'But I am inquisitive about Hunter Seyi. Why did you not look for him?' she asked.

'I did but he was not in his hut and I thought he was killed because people I read thought about it. They were convinced he must have been killed by the kingpins since I was close to him.'

'Who was the man behind your father's downfall?'

'His right hand man.'

That took her by surprise.



'You seriously have a lot to tell me.'

'Yes but that will be later.'

'So you were able to connect to the bomb and stopped it from detonating?'

'Yes but that last part is also because my team has trainings on how to defuse a bomb.'

'I can't feel any pain at all not even where Cloud placed that shitty thing.'

She did not feel horrified at all. It was just like discussing something that was not painful.

'Good your mind is no longer disturbed by it.'

'Answer me.'

'You are healed Bella, just the physical wound and maybe the scar but I like it. It is the sign of God's mercy, the mark of your braveness, a reminder of the day your captor was defeated.'

Guardian rubbed her bandage.

'When will the bandage be out? I want to also see it.'

'Very soon my love. Very soon.'

He kissed her forehead. There was something she was supposed to ask but she just could not remember.

'The slaves?' Guardian asked.



'How did you know that is what I was trying to remember?'

'Because it's one of the things you are yet to ask about.'

'So what happened to them?'

'They are safe and congratulations Bella.'

'For what?'

'You have a job waiting for you.'

'I don't understand.'

'The president has appointed you to be part of the team that will be handling rescued trafficked victims, right here in Abuja and recently Asaba.'

'I don't have any experience, I did not go to school.'

But Guardian started laughing.

'What's funny?'

'Trust me Bella, you have more experience than those who went to school. You are a survivor and rescued victims will rather listen to someone who can empathize with them than someone who studied how to handle them. Mary kept asking of you. She said you were more worried about them and you gave out information about someone dear to you to save her.'

'You mean I betrayed you?'

'No, meaning you kept her alive and did what my queen was supposed to do.'



Tears started flowing from her eyes. She remembered something else.

"What of Amara?"

"Dead, tried to shoot Mark."

"What of the girl you talked about?"

"She was found in Lagos, battered but will live."

She should be sad. Amara was the closest to what she could call a friend.

'Then I'm glad she is dead, she was a bad influence'

'Open up Guardian.'

'To what?'

'I want to read your mind. It's over, you are no longer protecting me from knowing too much, let me see and hear your inner mind, open up for me.'

'I will but after I confess something to you.'

'What is it?'

Guardian did not immediately answer, instead he pulled her up from his warm body and made her sit on the bed. He also sat up. From the expression on his face, she knew it was something serious. She started thinking of possibilities.

"Are you married? You gave up searching for me and got married, then you saw my pictures and you don't know what to do?" she spoke out loud.



"No" he answered but not in her mind.

It was a serious thing. What could be worse than him getting married?

"I am married and you are my wife, there is no other woman, just a child."

"Can you make me understand?"

"I have a child" he answered looking at her guiltily.

It took her unawares and she did not know how to feel not to talk of reacting.

"And her mum?"

That was the first thought that came to mind.

"She will never be an issue. I promise you Bella, you will never have any issue with her mum."

"Her?"

He did not answer.

"Guardian" she said.

"Please just hear me out. Please."

"Connect us now" she said.

She felt Guardian and allowed him in. She trusted Guardian but she wanted to remove every doubt about the mother of his daughter. It was different from Guardian just speaking to her mind, it was like becoming one but having two different thoughts.



"Okay, I'm listening" she spoke out loud.

"There was nothing I could do, I discovered I was a father when it was too late..."

"Wait what the heck are you talking about? You are going the wrong way, God forbid you thinking she should have been aborted because of me."

She felt Guardian's relief.

"So what do you want to know?"

"Her mother."

"She won't disturb."

"But she will be with her daughter."

"No she is with me and I have full custody."

And Guardian was saying the truth.

"How old is your daughter?"

"You won't believe if I tell you."

"Guardian" she called straining the 'dian.'

"She is five and her name is Lara."

"You named your daughter Lara?"

"Omolara, Esther Adeola. I am afraid it will hurt your feelings but if you want her native name changed it's...."



"No.... don't you dare. You also gave her your mum's name."

"Yes."

She could not believe it. She was being handed a second chance, a chance to show Guardian's daughter the love she never showed her daughter. Guardian's daughter was even same age with Lara, same native name. This was really a second chance. Tears started flowing out of her eyes.

"Can I meet her? Will she accept me?"

"She is expecting you and she can't wait to meet you Bella."

"And you are sure her mum is not interested in her. Can you show me? Show me your daughter and her mum."

"That I cannot Bella."

"Why?"

"I will rather take you to meet her and it's better you don't see or know her mum please."

She understood the path Guardian was coming from. She nodded.

"But I want to meet her now."

She tried to come down from the bed but Guardian held her back.

"What?" she asked.

"Thank you. I can read you Bella. I can see the love you are already having for her. Thank you. You keep melting this stone heart with your actions."



"Okay but can we go now?"

She just could not explain her excitement. Not only was she a free woman after more than four years, she was back in Guardian's arms and most importantly, she was being giving a second chance to right all her wrongs and she was not going to ever make same mistakes again. First on her list was to meet her new daughter, then she would visit Hunter Seyi's grave. Somehow, she felt he would be happy to hear how she was back with Guardian.

She was almost out of the bed when Guardian pulled her back and claimed her lips. She felt heat all over her body. She wanted to make love with Guardian but her desire to meet Guardian's daughter was more. She pulled away.

"This can wait, please Guardian take me to Lara, take me to Esther."

She climbed down from the bed and went to the bathroom. She was happy there was a mirror. The room would need a spice of something feminine. She saw the bandage on her neck, it looked new like they had replaced the first one. She raised her top and saw the bite marks on her body but she could not feel any pain. She remembered Guardian had been weak before he took over her body. She wondered how he was able to survive without blacking out.

"Are you not going again? Please come out let's be done with it so you can attend to another pressing issue" Guardian shouted.

She started laughing, then stopped. She was really laughing. She was really with her husband, she was really free.



'Of course you are free but please come out' Guardian spoke to her mind.

She had never been this happy and free. She came out and saw Guardian standing by the door. He opened it and waited for her to come outside before locking the door. She followed him to a parlor. She was mentally redesigning the parlor as they walked past it to a passage. She would have wanted to explore the house but that would wait.

"Which part of Nigeria are we?" she asked.

"This is Circle house Abuja, your new home." Guardian answered.

"All of you live here?"

"No, we have a fortress in Benin, that's where we are going to pick Lara."

"I will also want to meet Beast and Al."

"That's where we are going to."

She followed him to an elevator which went down and followed him outside. She was expecting to meet others but was disappointed.

'Everyone is busy and I want to first introduce you to my immediate family. Almost all are in Benin. Three are waiting by the chopper.'

She was already seeing the chopper.

"I know meeting Lara is now your top priority but there is someone we are going to meet once we come back. He is the one who mentored me, the one who raised me. The one who took me to him is Major, his wife and his daughter are the ones waiting for us by



the chopper" Guardian said out loud.

"Okay."

They were already by the chopper. The lady was already hugging her before she could even greet them. They were standing very close to the helicopter.

"This is unbelievable. Welcome home my daughter-in-law" Major's wife said as she hugged her.

She was hugged and hugged back as Wild made the introductions. She did not need anybody to tell her that Balikis, also known as Doc or Sabrina was the daughter of Hadiya. She felt her heart beating double when Major also called her his daughter-in-law.

'We are one family in the Circle' Guardian spoke to her mind.

Major was the person Tayo talked about. Guardian had not told her what happened to Tayo.

'He has been arrested with audio evidence on him' Guardian responded to her thoughts.

She would ask him to explain more later.

"Time to go" Guardian said out loud.

It was Thursday, almost two weeks since Dad left. She was through with her



school lesson work but Pearl could not mark her last assignment because she was not feeling fine. It had started this morning before they had gone to the underground house. Wolf, her dad had asked her if she would still be able to take them to the underground house after they were through with their morning exercise. She had nodded and they had gone to the underground house to bath and eat. Aunty Halima, Aunty Cindy, Aunty Ella and Stud were around. Stud came two days ago. She was fun to be with. She was teaching them how to dance. Only Aunty Mena left but she said she would come back early. They said they were going to do something in GG's house.

Pearl had started crying after she had given her the last assignment in her English textbook. She did not mark it. They had already studied math and taken a break and eaten their lunch. None of the adults were around. She wondered what was keeping them at GG's place. Even Mark and Fast were still around. John had gone to hug Pearl. He even tried to tell her sorry but it sounded like he was saying shoyi. She and George kept asking her what was wrong but she did not answer. Pearl only stopped crying when Al joined her to cry. Puppy was even barking, Pearl's tears were making her sad. Pearl went to lie down on the tile at the empty space before the TV. John went to join her.

She told George she wanted to paint using her canvas but George told her to still teach them how to draw so that Al would meet up. Geoffrey was operating his tab as she drew an antelope. That was what Al wanted to draw. She drew, they followed her step by step. Al still had a lot to learn. Pearl started crying again. She was talking to her other Mum she said was in heaven.

"Geoffrey call Wolf. I don't even know what they are all doing in our house. Today is just

boring" George said.

Pearl's tears was distracting them. Al started crying. Geoffrey came to take Al to join him on his favorite couch. He would never sit on any other couch. Al did not stop crying, it must be because Pearl was still crying. She felt sad. George was right, today was just boring and she was missing Mum so badly. She would soon fall sick if Mum did not come soon. She missed her so badly.

"Omolara you are not going to cry too. Please don't cry" George begged.

She nodded and wiped the tears that were almost falling from her eyes using the back of her palm. George said Omolara sounded better.

The door opened and Wolf came in. He walked straight to Pearl. He laid down close to her back and pulled her to rest on his chest.

"It's okay Pup. I'm here. Ese won't want you to cry Pup. You are the one who made the rule. I hate to see you cry" Wolf said wiping her tears with his palm. He kissed her forehead. Pearl grabbed his neck as if someone was trying to steal her dad from her.

"I don't want to cry, it's just that I remembered her last birthday. When I told her to make a wish, she said her wish is impossible but I still made her to make a wish. Dad, Mum wished Mum would forgive you and also accept you. She wished you will marry her and she even said she wish you give birth to a son and name him John, she wished that we will be one family. She said she could almost see young John giving you headache and twelve years me looking so beautiful and happy. That was her last birthday wish" Pearl said and resumed her cry.



"How come you never mentioned that?" Wolf asked. His voice sounded like he was about to cry.

"Because today is her birthday and I remembered that all her wishes came through. I called her to tell her that her wishes came through but it felt like she will not really know. I wish she can see me...Mum..." she cried.

Wolf pulled her closer, rubbing her back.

"She heard you Pup. She did and I know she won't want you to fall sick. Your temperature is making me scared and I can feel your sadness, John too even Puppy"

Wolf said kissing her forehead.

Puppy started howling. John stood up and climbed Pearl's back. The both were now on top of Wolf. The door opened and Aunty Mena came in. She answered their greeting then went straight to join them on the ground. Wolf used his left hand to pull Aunty Mena to his side. She kissed Pearl's hair and joined Wolf to rub Pearl and John's back.

"Mum" Pearl said.

"I know Pearl, I heard everything. Let's make it tears of Joy. Her wish came through and you are so beautiful like your mum" Aunty Mena said.

"Okay let's not exaggerate to make ourselves feel better. Look at my jewel very well. I know she looks like her mum but please she is prettier, my omote" Wolf said.

Pearl and Mena started laughing.

"Daddy I want to sleep." It was Al, it made her turn to look Al's way, even George turned



too. Al was calling Beast with her watch. She did not know what Beast said to her but Al started crying.

"No no no. You should come and carry me" Al cried.

"Looks like today is crying day" George said to her. Beast must have responded increasing her cry.

"I want to sleep, come and carry me" Al cried.

Geoffrey tried to pull her to him but she refused.

"No it's my daddy I want."

She just knew it was because Wolf was carrying Pearl.

"Al dad is busy. Come let me carry you" Wolf called stretching his hands towards Al.

"No no, it's my daddy I want" she cried more.

It was not the first time she was doing that. If she fell her food by mistake, she would cry calling her daddy. If she was not solving her math well which was just one plus one stuffs, she would cry and call daddy. She, GG and Pearl were the only matured ones. Al was still a baby. John also threw tantrums and called daddy. They were acting like they were the only ones who had daddy, she had a daddy too just that he was far away trying to save Mum from evil Cloud.

"Omalara don't cry for your daddy please cause there is no solution to your own now and I don't want to use ear plug, pleeesssee" George said.



Geoffrey had already plugged something on his ears and was back to his tab but he looked at George before operating his tab.

"Cutie, Geo said your dad is coming. Stop crying" George said.

Al looked at Geoffrey, then George and started sniffing. It was better than crying. She turned towards Wolf and it looked like Pearl had slept off on her daddy's chest. She felt like crying, she wanted to also sleep on Daddy's chest and Mummy's arms. She felt George pulling her to rest on his shoulder.

"Lara, Geoffrey said Wild will soon come" George said tapping her back.

"For real?" she asked raising her head.

"Yes" George answered.

"When?"

"I don't know but Geoffrey is always right" George answered.

The door opened and Beast came in.

"Daddy" Al shouted running to meet him like she did not see him few hours ago.

She stretched her hands for Beast to carry her but Beast did not. He folded his hands and just stared at her. She was so small before Beast.

"Daddy carry me" Al said.

"Why?" Beast asked.

"Because I want to sleep" Al said.



"Wolf thanks a lot for making me leave what I was doing" Beast said walking to meet Wolf and his family. Al followed him.

"You are welcomed. I offered to carry her but she refused. She wants her daddy" Wolf said.

He was not sounding tired even though Pearl and John were still on top of him.

Beast bent down and touched Pearl's forehead.

"She is okay, the fever is coming down" Wolf said.

Beast nodded and kissed Pearl's head.

"Daddy carry me" Al said pulling Beast's leg. She was just so small before Beast. Beast turned to face her.

"Al if you want to sleep, you go to your bed."

"I won't sleep."

"Then let Geoffrey make you sleep."

"But I want you."

"But you said I should stop carrying you because you are now a big girl" Beast said.

"I change my mind, I am a small girl. Wolf is carrying Pearl" Al said. Wolf and Aunty Mena started laughing.

"Pearl did not tell Wolf to stop carrying her" Beast said leaving Al to go sit on a couch. Al followed him and climbed his legs.



"Al you are lucky I'm through, you would have waited for puff girls to carry you cause they are stronger than me."

"It's powerpuff girls dad and I am not heavy" Al said grabbing Beast's neck.

"And powerpuff girls are not real, it's just a cartoon."

"Wow, finally. So what made you change your mind?"

"Geoffrey told George and George told me."

"So you believed Geoffrey but did not believe me?" Beast asked.

Al removed her hand from Beast's neck and started laughing.

"I love you dad" Al said kissing Beast's cheek. She looked so cute. Beast just stared at her as she laughed.

The door opened and Aunty Halima entered.

"Seriously? I thought there was something seriously wrong. I come here and I am seeing you laughing. Al" Aunty Halima called, her hands on her waist.

She always liked Aunty Halima's voice. It was as if she was singing a beautiful song, same with Al. Al increased her laughter.

Aunty Halima went to meet Wolf, she bent down and touched Pearl's forehead.

"Thank God. There is really a magic in daddy's hand" Aunty Halima said kissing Pearl's hair.

She came to meet them.



"Why do I feel you also cried?" Aunty Halima asked her.

She shook her head, then nodded.

"She is missing her daddy and mummy and today is crying and boring day" George said.

"No it's not, you will see" Aunty Halima said patting her hair and standing up. Aunty Halima stretched her hands widely and yawned.

"I am so tired and I want someone to carry me. Who will carry me?" Aunty Halima said turning round like she was searching for someone.

"Your daddy is not here" Al said laughing.

She was now sitting on her daddy's left leg, she was not even sleeping. Al was making her miss Daddy so much.

"But I want someone to carry me. I want to sleep" Aunty Halima said imitating Al.

She and George joined Al to laugh.

"Now daddy is here and you are not sleeping, but me I want to really sleep cause I am very tired" Aunty Halima said joining Beast on the couch. There was no space for her to sit down, she sat down on Beast who had been staring at her like he had not seen her for a long time. Beast placed her well on his lap and made her to rest her head on his chest after kissing her forehead. Al also rested her head on Beast's chest. There was enough room for both of them. Aunty Halima placed her hand on Al's shoulders.

"Mum is a baby" Al said laughing.



"I'm daddy's baby" Aunty Halima said.

"I am daddy's only baby" Al said.

"So what am I?"

"Daddy's queen."

'Okay. Al can your daddy's queen sleep on daddy's chest?" Aunty Halima pleaded but Al started laughing.

"Pleassee" Aunty Halima said.

"Okay" Al said.

Aunty Halima kissed Al's cheek.

"Thank you daddy's baby" Aunty Halima said.

"Al and Obim, you know I am right here" Beast said and they started laughing.

She missed Dad and Mum so much. She turned to look at Wolf. It looked like they were sleeping.

"Omalara" George called.

He wiped the tears that were dropping from her eyes and pulled her to rest on his shoulder. Her face was facing Beast and family. It looked like Aunty Halima and Al were sleeping. Beast was staring Al, then at Aunty Halima's face like she was a Christmas gift he asked Father Christmas to give him and he was afraid someone would come and steal her if he looked elsewhere.



She was about to sleep but George stopped her.

"Lara look at what Geo is playing" George said turning her to face the TV.

It was the big field and there was a helicopter and Grandpa and Grandma and Sabrina were coming down. She wanted to scream their name from excitement but stopped.

Someone was also coming down from the helicopter, from the area where Fast used to sit.

"Daddy" she screamed and jumped and screamed and jumped and screamed but stopped.

Daddy was carrying someone down from the helicopter. She jerked from shock.

"Mummy" she screamed as loud as she could scream.

"Mummy" she screamed again.

Her screams woke everybody sleeping but she did not care, her chest was already paining her, she was so happy.

"Mummy" she screamed running towards the door that would lead her to the landing room where their cars were parked. She was on her car in a jiffy driving to meet Mummy.

The flight did not take up to an hour. She had never flown on a helicopter but



she was not afraid. She was with Guardian and there was nothing to fear. She could communicate through the gadgets she was made to wear. Guardian was the pilot and he was not connected to her. She did not even want him to because she was making acquaintance with Major and family. They talked about Guardian and the hard time he gave Major. Major's wife also told her about the day Guardian told her he was married. Then they also discussed their surprise at what Guardian could do which only Major knew very well but Major said he had no idea Guardian could hold her from slipping away. Hadiya said she was still trying to comprehend with her medical knowledge how Guardian was able to heal her wound from inside but she was worried after Guardian blacked out after she had been dropped in their Circle clinic. That took her aback. She never knew.

'There is nothing to worry about dear' Guardain spoke to her mind but he did not connect them together.

"You did not know?" Major asked.

She shook her head. Tears started flowing from her eyes.

"You could have died you idiot" she shouted out loud.

"I'm okay. I knew I was safe as long as I was in the house and I was only out for seventeen hours. It was worth it" Guardian answered.

She did not have the time to reply him because they were landing inside a beautiful compound.

"Wow, this is really a fortress" she said, awed by the flowers, the garden, the gym, the



swimming pool, the two houses and other stuffs. There was nobody outside as Guardian helped her to come down. The others were already down.

"Where is everybody?" she asked turning sideways. She was carried away by the beauty of the compound.

Guardian pulled her and turned her back to rest on him, he raised her head to look towards the garden.

"Look" Guardian said.

She saw children cars being driven by kids towards the field Guardian had landed the helicopter. She could not contain her excitement, she was about to meet Guardian's daughter. There was also a part of her that was worried Esther might not accept her. One of the cars which was way ahead of the other cars stopped. A girl was jumping down, almost like the car was not fast enough.

"Mum" the girl screamed, she was running to them.

She felt a shock like she mistakenly touched a water heater that was leaking current. It hit her on her chest then leaped to her lips.

She wiped her eyes and looked at the girl. The girl was still running towards her and she was still screaming 'Mum.' She turned to look at Guardian, he nodded. She did not ask him anything but he nodded. She turned back to the girl running towards her, she placed her hand on her chest.

"Mum" the girl screamed.



She saw herself running. She was running to meet the girl. Who cared if she was dreaming or hallucinating? Her Lara was running towards her and the only thing important at the moment was to close up the distance, to know if she was really crazy or if the girl running towards her screaming her name was real.

"Lara" she screamed as she ran to her, her heart beating too fast.

"Mum" the girl screamed.

"Lara."

"Mum."

"Lara."

"Mum."

"Lara."

The girl could not scream mum again because she was holding her and they were rolling on the field. The girl felt real, she smelt real.

"I can't believe this. Lara is this really you. Am I dreaming?"

But Lara was crying.

"My mum is home. Daddy has brought Mum home" Lara cried.

She joined her to cry, her heart cried with her. She stopped rolling on the field with her and held her on top of her.

"Oh my God, you are real, you are alive" she cried rubbing her cheek.



"Yes, I missed you a lot Mum, I miss you" Lara cried holding her neck. She did not feel pain, just the bandage was shifted. Lara noticed and jerked.

"No, no, I am fine. It is no longer paining me. Dad made sure it will not pain me. Oh my God, Guardian took you away from Cloud. He kept you safe" she cried.

"Yes, I have been very happy. I have a lot of uncles and aunties and brothers and a sisters. I am very happy. I am happy you are home. Dad said he was going to remove the drugs from your body and bring you home after beating Cloud."

"And he did. Cloud is no more. I am free. And you are alive. I am dreaming" she cried.

"It's me Mum. It's me" Lara cried.

She held Lara closer. There were no words to express her feelings. Her tears was all she had to express her joy. The two of them just held each other and cried. She still felt the shock which was now back in her heart. It was too much to handle, she felt dizzy but felt strength. She knew it was coming from Guardian, he did not connect, she knew he was giving her the time to absolve her shock.

"This is just too much. I don't deserve you Lara. I hurt you so much" she cried.

"Mum you already said all that. Dad played it for me. You said you will be living with Dad, you said you are sorry but I was never angry with you" Lara said.

"He did?"

Lara nodded. She remembered the day Guardian had made her talk to him as if she was talking to Lara.



She started kissing Lara on her nose, her cheeks, her forehead, her lips. She was just too excited.

"I am happy you are back home Mum, I miss you so much."

"Me too. I'm the luckiest lady in the world. Everything is restored back. God answered your prayers Lara. You now have a dad."

"The best daddy in the whole world."

She only hoped she would not wake up. If she was dreaming, she wanted to be trapped forever in her dream.

'You are not dreaming my love' Guardian said to her mind.

'How do I thank you, what can I do for you to know how grateful I am?'

'First don't ask me about my daughter's mother again.'

She started laughing, then started crying.

'You really played me. I did not even think that the girl you were talking about is Lara even when you said her name. There was also the part where you said her English name is Esther, you gave her an English name. How was I supposed to even dare think Lara is alive? You really played me Guardian'

'It was fun but you know what I really want.'

She started laughing again. Lara was resting on her chest. She hoped Lara would not think her mother was going insane. She was distracted from answering Guardian.



Someone was climbing on top of Lara. A cute little boy, should not be more than a year. Lara turned. She held the boy from falling and pulled him to her side.

"How are you cutie?" she asked kissing his smiling cheek.

"That's John Mum, our last born. He does not accept strangers" Lara said.

"Then he knows I am not a stranger" she said rising up. She sat down on the field pulling Lara and John to her. John was staring at her neck.

"Lara am I bleeding?"

Lara shook her head.

"The bandage is just loose."

She turned to observe her environment and it dawned on her that she and Lara had been entertaining a crowd. She felt someone hug her from the back.

"Mummy Lara" she heard a sweet soothing voice.

"Is that Al?" she asked turning to face the girl.

She looked surprised and she looked cuter in real life.

"Yes, this is Al" Lara said.

She pulled a surprise but smiling Al to her. She would ask for her full name later. She was now carrying three children. Another joined them. They all had to have cute kids.

"I am George, Lara's best friend and this is my brother Geoffrey. You can call us GG" George said.



Before she could welcome Geoffrey who was the identical of George, a bigger kid, should be eleven or twelve joined them.

This was real, she was not dreaming, she was home and the experience was more than electrifying.

(Ladies and gentleman, "WILD: No room for the weak" will be ending TOMORROW MONDAY.)

CHAPTER THIRTY THREE

{Happiness and joy are more appreciated by those who have lived the opposite of happiness and joy, especially those who have been in the dangerous wild side of life-Wild.}

She had asked about everything apart from things concerning her, things the average female would have wanted to first of all find out about. She was yet to ask about her clothes, about her shoes or even how she was putting on a blouse and a skirt and where she had been since four days ago. He had carried her from the clinic after her

last drip and had taken her to her new home because he knew she would soon wake up. She had subconsciously put on the slippers by the bed, her mind only preoccupied by his daughter she was going to meet, about visiting Hunter Seyi, about making her new home feminine and nothing about shopping for wears. His Bella, his wife, his love, his heartbeat, his queen who already accepted his daughter without knowing she was also her daughter. His heart was very painful, it hurt more than being angry, it hurt so much watching their reunion but he loved the hurt, he loved what was happening to his stone heart. His queen was back.

He did not connect to her because he wanted to give the both of them mother and daughter time. He could read her without connecting but the feeling of being in her mind was different, he could not keep himself from knowing first hand on what she was thinking. After Pearl had joined the children clamoring on her, he connected. Her emotions shook him and sent a hot flame to his heart. She was filled with awe for him.

'You should have more awe for God dear.'

She did not reply him, she was rather allowing Pearl to do the full introductions. Pearl was looking better. Wolf had told them Ese, Pearl's late mum's birthday was today and Pearl was not okay early in the morning. John had been the one to intervene between mother and daughter reunion. The little dude was very unpredictable and hyperactive. What was surprising was John's acceptance of Bella like he knew her long ago or maybe their actions were making him inquisitive. Then all the others had followed. Everyone was around, including Stud. He had been told Halima and the other ladies were preparing a welcome party for Bella, more like a wedding reception according to

Halima but it would be in doors, Jason's parlor. Bella's surprises were not yet over.

Halima was the first to get to Bella, then the others. At a point, he was the only one still standing by the chopper. Even Major and family were with them, introducing and hugging and laughing and pecking. He saw her brief confusion when Stud hugged her but Stud cleared the air immediately. Jason and Major had been trying to convince Stud to look the way she was created but they were yet to succeed.

It was getting late, they needed to get inside because there were so many things to discuss. He had already read the report of the massive crackdown and it was sad that Special Force lost two, air force lost three, the military lost seven and navy lost one. It had been all over the news, international news were also having a field day. Cloud was now more popular in death. The scariest part was some of the slaves' captors were popular figures including seven House of Assembly members from Ondo, Bayelsa, Lokoja, Kastina, Markurdi, Bauchi and Lagos. They all had sex slaves, the one from Ondo was gay. It was horrifying meeting the rescued victims. He would start debriefing once the doctors in charge of them had declared them medically fit. It was also sad that about twenty six captives were already dead. Total number of rescued captives was four hundred and two, with three hundred females and one hundred and two males, from two hundred and fifty four locations. There were also kids ranging from five years upwards. Not all were sex slaves although he was yet to get the full data and details of that. That would come after they've undergone full medical examination and stage one debriefing. He had a lot of work to do.

'I will always be with you throughout' he heard Bella's voice making him to smile.



She could now read his mind. She was also laughing to something Ghost said after hugging Beast. She was surprisingly carrying John who was still interested in the bandage on her neck. He could feel the bubbles of excitement coming from her.

'I take it back, I don't think I like this idea. It makes me look exposed' he replied her.

'Don't you dare close your mind. Now you understand how it feels like.'

He smiled and started thinking of how he was going to slowly strip her clothes off her and make love to her, how he was going to drive her crazy and begging for more.

'Seriously? Stop being a silly pervert.' She was blushing outside while heating up inside.

'As long as I'm a pervert to my wife, then I will remain a pervert.'

'Guardian please stop. You are terribly distracting me and I can't keep a straight face like you.'

'Then get out of my head.'

'No way.'

'Then stay and stop telling me what to think about.'

'I know what you are trying to do but it won't work.'

'Okay' he replied.

Lara turned towards him, she had been turning round like she was searching for something. All this while she had been screaming she was missing him but she was just realizing she was yet to welcome him.



'Stop being jealous' Bella replied, same time laughing to what Pearl was saying.

"Dad" Lara screamed running to meet him.

Even the kids joined her apart from Pearl and John who were acting like he was not existing, clinging to Bella.

'You know jealousy can make one sick.'

'So this is what it feels like for someone's thoughts not to be safe with him.'

'Yes' Bella replied.

Halima was holding her hand and they were now walking towards Cindy's home. Time for him to join them. That was after giving his only child a bear hug.

"Dad, I miss you so much" Lara said on his arms.

He just did not understand why babies had a special intoxicating scent to them. He felt that pang in his heart as he kissed her cheeks.

"Me too but I almost thought you have abandoned me now that Mum is back."

"No. Why will you think that? I love you Dad. You did it, you brought Mummy home."

She kissed his cheek.

"Thank you Dad, I'm so happy" Lara said.

"I can see that. I'm happy to see you more than you are happy to see me."

"No Dad, I'm happier."



"But I've been standing here and you were with Mum."

'Jeez, jealousy' Bella said.

Lara was laughing.

"No it's not like that. It's just that I have not seen Mummy for so long. But I also missed you."

She kissed his other cheek.

"Okay, I believe you" he said gently placing her down. He squatted to receive GG and Al. They ran into his outstretched arms. He lifted all of them including Geoffrey who was putting on his hand gloves. He spun them around before dropping them on the ground.

"I hope you are not going soon" George asked.

"I know why you are asking" he said.

"But you are staying, please stay. I don't want Lara to leave" Al said.

"Me too" George said.

"We will talk about that later. Let's go join the others."

He carried Al and held Lara with his other hand as they walked to Cindy's house. But he had to stop because Puppy was barking for him. He turned and saw that Puppy was on something that looked like a large skate board but with four poles and a handle like a bicycle hands or more of a machine which he knew was being operated by Geoffrey because he was operating his tab. He dropped Al and went to meet up with the dog and

kissed his head while rubbing his back. His legs were still bandaged.

"How are you?" he asked rubbing Puppy's head. Puppy barked shaking its tail.

The equipment rolled past him towards the house. He carried AI with Lara holding his free hand as they joined the others who were already at Cindy's parlor.

The issue of Lara leaving with them was going to be very difficult. Even though it was not up to two weeks since Lara joined them, he could see she had bonded so well with them. But she would have to leave, Abuja was their permanent home. He could not leave their base. They had temporally stopped visiting the house since Lara was rescued but he knew it would now be a must for the kids to come over from Friday to Sunday night. He would also make Jason to install a big TV in Lara's room so she could talk and video chat with them every day. That was the highest he could do but he was not sure they would be able to go back immediately.

Bella was screaming excitedly when they got to Cindy's parlor. Even the kids including Lara were shocked with the transformation in Cindy's sitting room. The kids were not aware.

'WELCOME HOME BELLA, QUEEN OF CIRCLE FAMILY' was written with big glittering block letters. It was resting on a wall. There were large sparkles of different colors of disco lights hanging up. Then lots of flowers and balloons. There were sofas with cushions arranged in shape of U with glass stools beside them. He had thought there would be round tables and chairs but there was just an empty space apart from the chair. He just knew there must be a reason Halima planned it that way. She was made to sit at the center of the chairs, then Halima came to drag him to sit with Bella. Puppy

was already inside but close to Wolf and family. Everybody took a seat while Bella kept struggling to stop herself from crying like a baby.

'I am not crying like a baby' Bella shouted in his head and punched his chest. He rubbed his chest pretending it hurt. Bella sent another one his way. He had forgotten she could read him. This was going to be difficult. He pulled Lara to him. She was looking at them confused on why Bella was hitting him.

"Lara don't mind her. She is angry I think she is crying like a baby" he said to Lara carrying her and placing her on his lap.

"Mummy is happy, it's tears of joy. She is not a baby" Lara defended her mum.

Bella kissed Lara's cheek.

"That's my baby" Bella said making Lara to smile.

He raised his head to look around. Beast was carrying Al, Jason was showing GG something on his tab, Wolf was carrying John, Ghost was talking with Fast and Mark. Major was talking with Stud while the others must have gone to the kitchen. He was correct cause they were coming out with food. He inhaled and looked at Beast.

"Oh my gosh, I smell pepper soup, like yam porridge" Bella said standing up to help them.

"No, no. After today. Today is for you" Halima said to Bella.

"Thanks" Bella said sitting back.

"It's not me, it's Beast that prepared it. We just helped" Halima said dropping a tray of



food in front of them.

"Before you say thanks, just know it's the only thing I can cook" Beast said to Bella.

"I'm impressed whether it's the only thing you can cook. Thanks" Bella said.

"You are welcome" Beast said.

"Al you know you are not eating that food" Ghost said.

He was sitting opposite Al and Beast, like the opposite two lines of the U curve. Cindy was serving his food, while Ella was serving Wolf's food. Wolf was sitting at the bottom of U with him, just that he was at the center with Bella and Lara.

"No I will eat it" Al said.

"It's antelope Al, you love antelope" Ghost said.

"Daddy" Al said facing her dad.

"Yes it's antelope. You love antelopes" Beast said.

"I like antelope. I am going to eat it" Al said.

"Al how can you eat your friend?" Fast asked.

He was sitting beside Ghost, but closer to the end of the U, while Mark was closer to the bottom making Ghost in their middle. Food there was already served.

"It is the one the snake swallowed that is my friend" Al said making them to laugh.

'What's with that?' Bella asked.



'Al watched a video of a snake swallowing an antelope, she cried because the antelope did not do anything to the snake.'

Bella smiled.

'It's funny cause that's same way I pictured Cloud before Beast' Bella said.

'I know, I was in your mind remember?' he replied.

She just smiled.

"That does not change anything Al, all antelopes are the same" Major said.

He was sitting at the other side of the bottom U, almost directly opposite Wolf, his Wife was by his left while Stud was by his right.

Food and drinks were now served for everybody including Puppy and they were now all sitting down.

Halima was the only one not sitting. She was standing at the middle of the empty space.

"Beast what next? Who is suppose to open the reception?"

And she looked surprised everyone was laughing. Halima was just something else.

"Obim just come and join me let the eldest open the floor" Beast answered.

"What is there to open? My daughter-in-law is back, we've all welcomed her, there is food on the table. I am eating this food on behalf of the Circle to celebrate the successful return of Bella and to tell her I am happy she is home with her husband. Honey let's eat."



And with that, Major and wife started eating while they watched him.

"Dad you just ruined what an opening speech should look like" Doc shouted. She was sitting almost at the edge of the U close to Fast.

"I am flattered. I was seriously not expecting this reception. I am very honored and grateful. Thanks a lot" Bella said after standing up.

"To a happy marriage life, good health and prosperity" Hadiya said raising her drink.

Everybody raised their drinks.

"Cheers" Hadiya said standing up to meet Bella.

And that was how the cheers started, even the kids were doing cheers. Then food and talks and laughter and love and family.

But he had a very important announcement. He waited till almost everybody was through before talking.

"Attention everybody. I have a very important announcement" he said.

The whole place became silent.

"The Circle may be having a new member" he said.

He could see the confusion on their faces. Only Major was aware except if Jason was monitoring them, none was aware. It was part of what was discussed at an emergency meeting with the president. That was where he was coming from when he met Bella already awake looking eatable.



'Guardian' Bella called. He felt the flames of her desires. It was heating him up.

'Get out of my head' he said.

'No.'

"Stud you went for your final test...."

"No I did not. I have not and it's not me" Stud said stopping Mark midway.

"If it's not Stud, then who?" Wolf asked.

He was touching Pearl's neck, checking her temperature. She was looking better. She and John had hugged him during cheers. Doc was now carrying John while Al was sitting on Jason's lap. George was with Mark and Geoffrey just remained close to his dad, same with Lara and Pearl.

"I am sending it to the app. You can check him out for yourself but I need to first give some explanations."

He made sure they were all looking at him before he continued.

"He is an ex US Naval SEAL, a Nigerian by citizenship. His father who had an Asian mother married a Nigerian girl who had a British mother. But he is a US citizen by birth and his father also has a USA citizenship. He has an identical twin brother, a renowned surgeon and both of them are relocating to Nigeria after he quit the Naval SEAL and after his twin quit his work for personal reasons. Our concern here is the Chief of Defense Staff was contacted by the US military about him. I met the president and all protocols will be observed except for a few. He is one of their best but I insisted he will

undergo every test to Special Force before Circle. Okay, I just posted his profile."

There was silence for a while. It was Stud who was with Major's phone who first broke the silence.

"This doesn't make sense at all. E nor just make sense. It's the guy men."

"Which guy?" Ghost asked.

"The guy I said defeated all six of us during training, the reason I am yet to join the Circle. I tell una say na naija guy. But e nor just make sense. Which personal reason go make am come Nigerian?" Stud said.

"We don't know until he comes" he answered.

"This is too much a coincidence. Jason don't you think so?" Ghost asked.

There was definitely something he did not know.

"Me too but at least we know part of the personal reasons" Wolf said.

"It is just unbelievable" Jason said.

"Hello, it seems you are aware of something I don't know" he said.

"Ghost broke into that other house just to find out anything about his neighbor" Beast said.

"The last part of the land with that house that is getting dilapidated from being unused?" he asked.

"Yes" Ghost said.



"And?" Major asked.

"Found a room with a grave and a big picture of a colored girl, looked more white than black. She died about seven years ago" Ghost said.

"That was almost the time we moved in here. The house was looking okay then. We thought we had neighbors but no one showed up, I only traced the owner of the land and house. It belongs to a lady who looked more white than black. When I looked into it, she was just becoming the new owner, settlement of a divorce suit. I never bothered about it cause there was no reason to until Ghost against all our advice broke in to look around" Jason said.

Good thing he was holding Cindy, she saved them from reading a lot of texts.

"And how is the dead girl related to the ex-Naval SEAL?" he asked.

"There was another picture in the parlor. The dead girl, the dad and mum and the twins, that's the naval SEAL and the surgeon. I snapped it to show everyone but Wolf said that was intrusion of someone's privacy. Wolf know law pass lawyer. I did not send it to the app again. That's why it's too much of a coincidence."

"So he has been to Nigeria before" Stud said.

"I guess to bury their sister" Mark said.

"I don't think so" He and Jason and Wolf said at the same time.

"What?" Beast asked.

"It's written that he is coming to Nigeria for personal reasons. I'm sensing it's like they



are coming to... I can't place it but I don't think her dead body was brought to Nigeria. When John died, at first, I lived in isolation, I wanted to avoid everything that would remind me of John but it did not work at all. When my father got sick I knew, that was when he was almost dead. I went home to see him and part of his advice was if I wanted to heal, the best place is home. He said the best way to forget is to remember. I never understood him, I only listened to him and it was bad when I finally came home, I could not live in the family house. It did not work until my jewel entered my life. Not only did she make me to remember, she made me to forget, not that I forgot John. It's not you Pup" Wolf said waving at John.

"I remembered him but it stopped hurting. I felt bad any time I realize I was trying to forget him. I think there is something deeper than we can see. They are both coming to take a permanent residency in Nigeria for personal reasons. A big reason that made him to quit USA. I think they are doing same thing I later did and if the girl was brought to be buried in Nigeria I don't think they would come back to Nigeria. I think she died here. But whatever it is, I have no opposition as long as he passes all the test" Wolf said.

"Me too, just that there is a small issue" Ghost said.

"What issue?" Sabrina asked.

"The way you are staring at the picture, Mark you have been demoted. We may be having a new Mr. Circle" Ghost said.

Doc, Fast and all the ladies started laughing.

"He is really handsome" Pearl said making everyone to turn to her.

"What? Pearl asked.

"Yes guys what? The guy is handsome, he is making Mark look ugly" Halima said.

'So cute" Cindy said. They had all collected their husband's phone.

"And they are two of them. They must have broken a lot of hearts" Ella said.

"I can stare at this face without getting tired" Mena said.

"I hope he passes the test, I like looking at handsome faces" Even Bella said.

"They are just cute" And Hadiya joined.

"Okay gentleman, we have a meeting. Hands up if you agree" Major said.

They raised their hands including Fast and Mark. The ladies started laughing.

"Fast what's the hand for?" Ella asked.

"I know trouble when I see it. I'm in solidarity with my brothers. There is trouble in paradise" Fast said.

"You guys are so insecure" Mena said.

"When is he coming?" Pearl asked.

"Wild you are going to tell the president that we don't want him again. Even this one too" Ghost said pointing at Pearl.

It was the seriousness on Ghost's face that made them to laugh.

"Pearl I don't think you will have time to see him cause someone else is coming" Major



said.

"Who? Pearl asked.

"George's father called me to inform me that Jake's parents have finally allowed him to come to Nigeria. Kids Jake is coming very soon" Major said and he was answered with excited screams and jumping.

He was not aware. They were all hearing it for the first time. Pearl was most excited.

"Pearl you know our discussion?" Wolf said but Pearl was not listening.

"How come Jake did not tell her?" he asked Major.

"Because Jake is yet to get the news. It will be his eighteenth birthday gift" Major said.

"Pearl you cannot let Jake know" Major said.

"Okay" Pearl answered.

"Finally, ladies and gentlemen and kids. Lara will be leaving with us tomorrow" he announced ending their celebration and turning it to instant tears.

"Wild" all the adults called him.

'You are terrible Wild' Bella said.

'That's the second time you are calling me Wild' he responded.

'Seriously? That's what you are concerned about? You just made the kids to cry' Bella screamed in his head.



He stood up and called them to him. Then he explained in details what he planned and gave them the option of letting Lara stay an extra week but the option of visiting will be out. And of course, they all stopped crying and chose the first option. He would be taking his wife and daughter home on Friday which would be exactly two weeks after he dropped Lara. But before he took them home the next day, he needed an alone time with his wife. But he was not even allowed to excuse himself because a music started playing. Don Williams 'Some Broken Hearts Never Mend.' Halima was the culprit behind the music.

"I want to dance. Beast I present to you your favorite song. Let's dance" Halima said dragging Beast from the chair but Beast refused to stand up. He was just laughing.

That was the damn song that made Beast to break the native pot that led him to Halima. Beast had never loved his kind of music, if not, he would have known Don Williams and wouldn't have found the song offensive.

'Whatever their story is, I'm glad he never knew Don Williams before then' Bella again. And she started laughing.

"I don't dance" Beast said laughing.

"But I dance. Lady can I have this dance?" he asked stretching his hands to Bella. Bella took his hands and he led her to the center of the empty space. That was what the space was meant for. Major and Hadiya joined same time with Ghost and Ella, followed by Wolf and Mena but Beast was still refusing to stand up. Cindy successfully pulled Jason to the dance floor same time the music ended but another started. Mark took



Pearl to the dance floor. The excitement from Pearl's face was clearly because of the good news about Jake. Al joined Halima to pull Beast up.

"Daddy let's dance" Al shouted.

"Okay, Okay" Beast said standing up and carrying Al and spinning with her while holding Halima with the other hand. He turned with the both of them and their laughter was just intoxicating. He signaled for Lara to join them. Fast and Stud just sat down watching them like they were spectators. Doc joined her dad and mum. Hadiya left dad and daughter to pull Fast to the dance floor. Doc rested her head on her daddy's chest as her dad spun with her. George came and pulled Lara away and started dancing and laughing with her while Geoffrey just watched and smiled at Al.

Mark pulled Stud from her seat and started dancing with her while Pearl started dancing with her kid brother. He could sense the joy coming from Stud, then the nostalgic feeling, waves and waves of it. Stud had always felt like an outsider. He saw and heard so many of her thoughts during her test and even before then, during briefing for an undercover mission as a police officer in the north which she did for two years. She wrecked a lot of havoc there. She was the one who sent an Intel concerning Ella's life being in danger. Those guilty had already been executed in a very fast judgment because of the glaring evidence. Stud was very good just that she had a low self-esteem because she was brought up by an abusive step mum and an I-don't-care father. Her half siblings had tortured her for years on how ugly she looked and how she was not supposed to be a girl because she looked like a boy. It had affected her so much that she started dressing like a boy. She always acted okay before everybody and he would

have been deceived if he was normal. Stud had never known love. She believed no man would ever see her as a woman and even though she acted like she did not care, deep down, she cared so much and she dreamed of having a home like the ones she was seeing in the Circle. That was her most motivating factor, the main reason she wanted to become a Circle, it was also the reason he sent her to come spend a week here in Benin, although he told her that the children needed to learn her style of fighting.

'And you act like you don't have a soft heart. Thank you Guardian' Bella again.

Bella started laughing.

'I have to apologize to Beast. So I can't have my thought privacy?' he asked kissing Bella's cheek and spinning her around to the tune of another country music.

'What of Fast? I did not see any sign he is getting married' was Bella's response. So worried about everybody but herself. Bella smiled.

'So?' she asked.

'Fast is not planning on getting married.'

'Why?'

'Long story.'

'In summary.'

'Very persistent.'

'I want to know about my family.'



'Fast would have still been in prison if not for Major.'

'I don't understand.'

A slow country music started. Bella rested her head on his chest as he spun her slowly to the tune of the music.

'He was serving a fourteen years jail term for rape.'

He saw the shock on Bella's face, same way others had been shocked when Fast had finally told The Circle everything about him during one of their bonfires.

'Was he guilty?' Bella asked.

'That's the big issue. She was his friend and Fast was raised in an orphanage, started struggling on his own at age fifteen. Fast is very intelligent. He was already through with secondary school at that age but he lied to people that he was eighteen and he looked eighteen so he drove trailers and caterpillars and he was never caught. He said he just drove. Give Fast anything locomotive and he will drive it. He was never taught how to fly a helicopter.'

'If we are not discussing with our minds, I wouldn't have believed you. So?'

'He worked for the girl's father and they became friends. There was a time he was asked to take the man's car to the mechanic for servicing which he could do himself, but Fast wanted to groove around but drove past an army check point without stopping and Major was around, he was actually going back to Abuja after finishing an assignment at the barracks.'



'Where?'

'Owerri. Fast is from Imo state.'

'So.'

'Major was also by the check point just passing with his car when the soldiers at the check point started chasing Fast with their Hilux and Fast had used them for a nice ride. Major said he did not even know he was following the chase. Major said he fell in love with Fast when he drove the vehicle with just one side of the tires making the vehicle go vertical so he could drive past a very narrow lane for only bikes. He completely lost them and even Major who crammed the plate number with the aim of tracking down Fast but funny enough, he forgot, a rare thing for Major. Major had one day followed the president on a visit to Owerri. Part of the president's visit took him to the prison, that was where Major met Fast. Major does not forget anything.'

'But he forgot...'

'That's the issue, that was his first time according to him. He asked Fast what his offence was and Fast who had no idea why Major was interested in him told him he was a rapist. Major looked into the case and with his influence, Ekene was granted pardon. It was easy because he had a clean record after a year in jail.'

'Fast's name is Ekene?'

'Yes.'

'But did he really rape the girl?'



Edit with WPS Office

'Why are you asking me?'

'Because you are Wild, you can read mind.'

'I'm not permitted to read my family.'

'Wild, I know you know.'

'Bella I read minds which can be deceptive.'

'Meaning?'

'Fast believed he raped her, he pleaded guilty.'

'Did he?'

'Yes and no.'

'Wild can you explain?'

Another song started, almost same beat with the former one.

'Fast had allowed me to go through his memory of the day it happened. He was drunk, the girl was not drunk. They were the only one around and the girl had allowed him to enter her room, she had also been the one to initiate a foreplay. She was eighteen, Ekene was also eighteen. But Fast was very drunk. The girl had a second thought when they were already naked and she actually did not resist with her body, she just told Fast to stop but..'

'But what?'

'That's was all Bella. She told Fast to stop but she did not want Fast to stop. She was



Edit with WPS Office

even the one who pulled Fast to her and she was not drunk. It was just Fast who was drunk. But when her father came to arrest Fast for raping and impregnating his daughter, Fast had only remembered her voice telling him to stop. That was the guilt he carried to court. The father had plans to marry his daughter to one Chief. According to Fast, she aborted the pregnancy and was married off to the chief.'

'So it was her father not the girl.'

'No it was the girl. She had told her father she was raped and had accused her father's worker of invading her room when no one was around, then raped her three times. She also said that with her clear mind in court. Fast showed me everything. Fast never had feelings for her. I know that because Fast took me through memory lanes and I had to absolve Fast's mindset to fully become a participant of his past. For days, Fast showed me all his memory of her. Fast just saw her as a sister. If I should interpret her actions, I think she was trying to have more than a relationship with Fast but it did not turn out the way she wanted. One of Fast's memories had her confronting him for flirting with her friend after sleeping with her. Fast had told her it was a drunken mistake and he had no interest in her. Two weeks later, Fast was arrested. After Major had rescued Fast, he went straight to Defense Academy and within two years, he met all the requirements and became part of the Circle. Fast had sworn off women from the day he left prison because he still felt guilty but now, it's because he is pissed off. After correcting his false memory about what happened, Fast just want to live alone. He left Imo state and had never looked back.'

'I hope he finds love' Bella said.



He had nothing to say to that because that would be a miracle.

The song ended and one of his favorite Don William's song "It Must Be Love" started playing. The song was too short but he was glad it was put on replay but he was not even allowed to enjoy it with his wife cause Major collected her. Hadiya started dancing with him, Fast was dancing with Pearl, Mark was surprisingly dancing with Doc while Major stared daggers. He used his hand to wave at Major and told him to relax making Major to smile.

'What's with Mark?' Bella asked even as she danced with Major.

'He is in love with Doc but he has messed up so badly in front of her that she is yet to believe him and Major is also against Mark because he also witnessed Mark's escapades.'

'I have a lot of work to do.'

He had to force himself not to laugh at what Bella said. He got Bella back as the song replayed for the third time. Major was back with his wife while Stud had already formed a circle with the kids. Their laughter and happiness tasted more delicious than his best food.

'Mark is also happy, maybe Sabrina agreeing to dance with him is a lead.'

'I can't say, just that I can feel their sexual pull but it has been there for long. Mark's excitement is not completely cause of Sabrina.'

'What do you mean?'



'I did not read him but he has been happy for two days now, Mark is normally always happy but the waves coming from him after going to see his Mum two days ago have been powerful.'

'Seeing his mum should be normal.'

'No Bella. His mum has no idea Mark is her son.'

'Explain.'

'Can it wait?'

'No please Guardian.'

'Mark has been searching for his mum since he joined the Special Force. His mum had abandoned him with his grandma.'

'Why?'

'Mark believed she was angry with his dad who Mark does not even know. Mark's dad according to his grandma was a half-cast working for an oil company who were drilling oil near their community. Mark's mum fell in love with the man, got pregnant but the man had left before she could tell him. He had promised to take her back to Lebanon. Mark's grandma had prevented her from aborting the pregnancy and to punish Mark's grandma, she ran away a month after giving birth to Mark. Mark's grandma who was a deaconess in her church could not stand the shame and gossips so she took Mark and left the community. She was a fish trader, she continued her trade where she moved to. She was also a fisherwoman. She took Mark with her from when Mark was three months. Mark's Grandma told us...'



'You met her?'

'Yes but she is late now. She died almost two years ago after a brief illness. Mark had taken us to meet his grandma and we had all spent the night there, then Beast was married to his first wife..'

'First..'

'Beast is a very long story.'

'Okay.'

'Mark's grandma said she had kept Mark by the river bank, Mark could not yet crawl so she had believed he would be safe while she checked her net but when she had turned to check on Richmond, that is his real name.'

'Okay, what happened?'

'She could not find him. She had panicked thinking he had been kidnapped but she could not believe it when he saw a five months old baby swimming.'

'Escravos male mermaid. That's what Tayo called him.'

He smiled.

'That's another story.'

'So Mark was able to track his mum.'

'Tried to but could not until he accidentally met his sister, rather rescued his sister a year and half ago from traffickers. She was among five girls about to be trafficked



abroad. Mark had recognised that she looked like a picture of his mum. He did not talk to her, he just did a DNA test. Jason's idea.'

'And?'

'And they are related. He tracked her home and saw his mum. There is no father figure and no other sibling. Just the girl and they were struggling to survive. His mum was even sick. Mark had paid the bill, moved them to a better place and opened a shop for his mum at the market. He is planning to train his sister in school. She is about to write Jamb.'

'Who does Mark resemble?'

'His dad.'

'You are telling me that his mum could not recognize him?'

He smiled.

'You have no idea about the family you just entered. There is what we call silicone mask. Mark is hiding his face using a silicone mask and even at that, he hardly comes in close contact with her. He watches her from a distance.'

'Is he not angry?'

'Mark is quite the forgiving type. He is not. He is grateful she did not abort him. He said he wanted to be mad, he wanted to storm his mum's house and show her the son she abandoned and ask why she never came back but his heart melted when he saw how they were suffering. What is there to be angry about? She was sick, poor and dying.'



Right now, he is yet to decide if he should show himself. Most times, he just visit to buy things from her. Somehow, his mum is always happy to see him. She has no idea who helped her. Mark did it in form of an NGO using Pastor Sam's church.'

'Who is Pastor Sam?'

'Jason's Pastor, the man that joined us together. They have a missionary group and also an NGO organization. Mark told him to help out. So he visited the hospital she was admitted and paid for her treatment, and every other thing. He told her that someone saw her state and decided to help her. When Mark came back two days ago to Abuja house before he returned here, I had to ask him what was up and he told me his mum was happy to see him and talked about so many things with him and he helped his mum sell things to customers and his mum told him to come visit her shop later. That was what was making him happy.'

'He should free that woman and tell her who he is.'

'You really have a lot of work to do.'

Bella started laughing. The song was playing for the fifth time, and it seemed no one was yet tired. The kids were having fun with Stud, even Fast, Mark and Sabrina had joined the circle.

'You are really the dream I've been dreaming of' Bella spoke to him singing along with Don Williams.

'I can't believe this is reality. I can't believe that the dream I have been dreaming of his now a reality' she said.



Tears were streaming down her face. He pulled her closer to him.

'Me too, I can't believe I found you after twenty two years of separation.'

'You did not just find me, you found me inside the wild, you came inside and rescued me' she said.

'Because I am the Wild' he said.

He spun her around as the music replayed for the sixth time.

At a point, he was almost not sure he would be able to bring his wife home, he was not sure he would ever experience the joy, the laughter, the happiness radiating from everyone. When he had just eight seconds to live, he had thought he would never see Bella again but somehow, his God given gift had helped him to save hundreds of lives, it helped him to bring his wife home, his God given gift helped him to win the game of the Wild.

(THE END)

{Dear readers,

The Circle has not ended because it had just began. THE NEXT TWO DAYS, UNTAMED, NIGHTMARES OF PEARL, GHOST (THE SHADOW IN THE DARK) and WILD: NO ROOM FOR THE WEAK were all introductions, like a prologue to the main book titled 'The Circle' which is a series that will run for a long time with seasons beginning with the first season titled:



Edit with WPS Office

THE CIRCLE (The Genesis)

Jerry, an ex-Naval SEAL officer relocates to Nigeria with his identical twin brother, a surgeon to try heal from a seven years hurt that still hunts them. He is introduced to The Circle, the best unit of Nigerian Special Force which specializes in dangerous undercover missions and neutralizing of threats. He is on his way to meet some members of the unit at their second fortress....Eighteen years Jake is visiting Nigeria to follow the footsteps of George, his cousin, a Circle fallen agent and to heal from the pains of losing his girlfriend. He is on his way to the Circle second fortress....Seventeen years Jennifer is going back to meet her abusive uncle after her first year second semester exam. A horrible accident forces these three groups to meet at the crossroad of fate leading to so many unexplained events and questions that must be answered. Action, Romance, Suspense, mystery.....

Coming soon.....



Edit with WPS Office



Edit with WPS Office